UNIVERSITÀ DEGLI STUDI DI MILANO-BICOCCA

Dipartimento di / Department of
Matematica e Applicazioni

Dottorato di Ricerca in / PhD program Matematica Pura ed Applicata Ciclo / Cycle XXX

# Algebra of sets, permutation groups and invariant factors 

Cognome / Surname Prandelli Nome / Name Mariateresa<br>Matricola / Registration number 798743

Tutore / Tutor: Francesca Dalla Volta

Coordinatore / Coordinator: Roberto Paoletti

## Contents

Introduction ..... 5
2 Modules over a P.I.D. and Matrix Normal Form ..... 15
2.1 Incidence matrices ..... 15
2.2 Equivalence of matrices with entries in a P.I.D. ..... 17
2.3 Finitely Generated Modules over a P.I.D. ..... 19
2.4 Pure modules and index of submodules ..... 23
3 A diagonal form for incidence matrices of $t$-subsets vs $k$-subsets ..... 35
3.1 A diagonal form for the incidence matrix $W_{t k}$ (Wilson's proof) ..... 35
4 A diagonal form for the incidence matrix $W_{t k}$ via linear algebra ..... 45
4.1 The Boolean lattice ..... 45
4.2 Eigenspace decomposition ..... 51
4.3 Polytopes ..... 58
4.4 Standard basis of polytopes ..... 63
4.5 Wilson's Theorem via linear maps ..... 73
$5 G$-modules and orbit matrices ..... 83
5.1 $G$-orbit decomposition ..... 85
5.2 The case $t+k=n$ ..... 91
5.3 Particular cases ..... 95
5.4 Matrices $X_{t k}^{-}$and $X_{t k}^{+}$ ..... 106
A Smith group of $\epsilon_{t}^{k}:\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}\right)^{G} \rightarrow\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{k}\right)^{G}$ ..... 113
B The case $t+k=n$ ..... 117

## Introduction

In this thesis we deal with the problem to find particular forms for incidence matrices of incidence structures $I_{t k}^{n}=\left(L_{t}^{n}, L_{k}^{n} ; \subseteq\right)$.

Denote by $\Omega$ a set of finite size $n$, say $\Omega=\{1,2, \cdots, n\}$ and by $L^{n}$ the power set of $\Omega$. We partition it into the sets $L_{i}^{n}$, for $0 \leq i \leq n$, where $L_{i}^{n}$ is the set of subsets of $\Omega$ of size $i$; i.e. the elements of $L_{i}^{n}$ are the $i$-subsets of $\Omega$.
$I_{t k}^{n}=\left(L_{t}^{n}, L_{k}^{n} ; \subseteq\right)$ is the incidence structure so defined: for $x \in L_{t}^{n}$ and $y \in L_{k}^{n}, x$ and $y$ are incident if and only if $x \subseteq y$. Its incidence matrix is denoted by $W_{t k}$.
R.M.Wilson in [15] ( Theorem 3.1.6 ) finds a diagonal form for $W_{t k}$ with purely combinatorics methods. For shortness we will refer to this result as "Wilson's Theorem".

Many other authors have dealt with the same problem, see for example [2], [7], [8] and [11].

The heart of the thesis is Chapter 4 where we give a new proof of Wilson's Theorem via linear maps.

Looking at [5] and starting from $I_{t k}^{n}$ we construct a new algebraic structure:
let $G \subseteq \operatorname{Sym}(n)$ be a permutation group on $\Omega$. The action of $G$ on $\Omega$ induces a natural
action on $L^{n}$. Formally, if $g \in \operatorname{Sym}(n)$ and $\alpha_{1}, \cdots \alpha_{i} \in \Omega$ then

$$
\left\{\alpha_{1}, \cdots, \alpha_{i}\right\}^{g}=\left\{\alpha_{1}^{g}, \cdots, \alpha_{i}^{g}\right\} .
$$

So $G$ acts on any $L_{i}^{n}$.
This action partitions each $L_{i}^{n}$ into orbits; $\tau_{i}$ denotes the number of orbits of $G$ on $L_{i}^{n}$.
For $0 \leq t \leq k \leq n$, if we call $\Omega^{t}=\left\{\Delta_{1}, \Delta_{2}, \cdots, \Delta_{\tau_{t}}\right\}$ and $\Omega^{k}=\left\{\Gamma_{1}, \Gamma_{2}, \cdots, \Gamma_{\tau_{k}}\right\}$ the $G$-orbits sets on $L_{t}^{n}$ and $L_{k}^{n}$, the pair $\left(\Omega^{t}, \Omega^{k}\right)$ is a tactical decomposition of $\mathcal{I}_{t k}^{n}$. Then we can define two matrices

$$
X_{t k}^{+}=\left(x_{i j}^{+}\right) \quad \text { and } \quad X_{t k}^{-}=\left(x_{j i}^{-}\right)
$$

where

$$
x_{i j}^{+}=\mid\left\{x \in \Delta_{j}: x \subseteq y, \text { for one fixed } y \in \Gamma_{i}\right\} \mid
$$

and

$$
x_{j i}^{-}=\mid\left\{y \in \Gamma_{i}: x \subseteq y, \text { for one fixed } x \in \Delta_{j}\right\} \mid .
$$

To be precise we should write $\left(X_{t k}^{+}\right)^{G}$, but we cut $G$ to avoid too heavy notation.
$X_{t k}^{+}$and $X_{t k}^{-}$are called the incidence matrices of $\left(\Omega^{t}, \Omega^{k}\right)$. Clearly, $X_{t k}^{+}$and $X_{t k}^{-}$are integral $\tau_{k} \times \tau_{t}$ and $\tau_{t} \times \tau_{k}$-matrices, respectively.

If $G=\left\{1_{G}\right\}$ then the orbits of $G$ correspond to the subsets and $X_{t k}^{+}=W_{t k}^{T}$ is the transpose matrix of the incidence structure $I_{t k}^{n}$.

In Chapter 5 we will give some new results related to the invariant factors of $X_{t k}^{+}$.

The thesis is so organized: in Chapter 2 we give the necessary prerequisites about modules and equivalence of matrices; in Chapter 3 we present the original Wilson's

## CONTENTS

proof given in [15].
In Chapter 4 we introduce an algebra related to the boolean poset $L^{n}$, in order to give our new proof of Wilson's Theorem, drawing from [4], [13] and [14],

Let $R$ be one of $\mathbb{Q}$ or $\mathbb{R}$, we construct the vector space $R L^{n}$ of formal sums of elements of $L^{n}$ with coefficients in $R$, i.e.

$$
R L^{n}=\left\{\sum_{x \in L^{n}} r_{x} x: x \in L^{n}, r_{x} \in R\right\} .
$$

We give to $R L^{n}$ the structure of algebra by adding a multiplication operation. For $x, y \in L^{n}$ we define a product in the following way:

$$
x \cdot y=x \cup y
$$

and extend this linearly to $R L^{n}$. If $f=\sum_{x \in L^{n}} f_{x} x$ and $h=\sum_{y \in L^{n}} f_{y} y$, we put

$$
f \cdot h=\sum_{x, y \in L^{n}} f_{x} h_{y} x \cdot y .
$$

We want to extend the $\subseteq$ relation from $L^{n}$ into $R L^{n}$. To do this we define incidence maps:

$$
\epsilon^{(n)}(x)=\left\{\begin{array}{ll}
\sum_{\substack{y \geq x}} y & \text { if }|x|<n \\
|y|=|x|+1 \\
0 & \text { otherwise }
\end{array} \quad \text { and } \quad \partial^{(n)}(y)=\left\{\begin{array}{ll}
\sum_{\substack{x \leq y \\
|x|=y \mid-1}} x & \text { if }|y|>0 \\
0 & \text { otherwise }
\end{array} .\right.\right.
$$

We also consider in section 4.1, for any $0 \leq t \leq k \leq n$, the functions $\epsilon_{t}^{(n) k}$ and $\partial_{k}^{(n) t}$ so defined

$$
\epsilon_{t}^{(n) k}:\left\{\begin{array}{rll}
R L_{t}^{n} & \rightarrow R L_{k}^{n} \\
x & \rightarrow & \sum_{\substack{y \geq x \\
y \in L_{k}^{n}}} y
\end{array} \quad \text { and } \quad \partial_{k}^{(n) t}:\left\{\begin{array}{rll}
R L_{k}^{n} & \rightarrow & R L_{t}^{n} \\
y & \rightarrow & \sum_{\substack{x \leq y \\
x \in L_{t}^{n}}} x
\end{array}\right.\right.
$$

We observe that the matrices associated to $\epsilon_{t}^{(n) k}$ and $\partial_{k}^{(n) t}$, with respect to the bases $L_{t}^{n}$ and $L_{k}^{n}$, are $W_{t k}^{T}$ and $W_{t k}$, respectively.

The results of Chapter 4 are achieved considering a particular basis for $R L_{i}^{n}$.
Given $0 \leq t \leq n-1$ and $k=t+1$, we construct two symmetric maps

$$
v_{t}^{+}=\partial_{t+1}^{(n) t} \epsilon_{t}^{(n) t+1}: R L_{t}^{n} \rightarrow R L_{t}^{n} \quad \text { and } \quad v_{t+1}^{-}=\epsilon_{t}^{(n) t+1} \partial_{t+1}^{(n) t}: R L_{t+1}^{n} \rightarrow R L_{t+1}^{n}
$$

and we state Theorems 4.2.2 and 4.2.3.

Theorem 4.2.2. Suppose that $2 t \leq n$. Then $v_{t}^{-}$has $t+1$ eigenvalues

$$
\lambda_{t-1,0}>\lambda_{t-1,1}>\cdots>\lambda_{t-1, t-1}>\lambda_{t-1, t}=0
$$

and $v_{t}^{+}$has $t+1$ eigenvalues

$$
\lambda_{t, 0}>\lambda_{t, 1}>\cdots>\lambda_{t, t-1}>\lambda_{t, t} \geq 0
$$

with multiplicity $n_{i}=\binom{n}{i}-\binom{n}{i-1}$, for $0 \leq i \leq t$. In particular we have the decomposition

$$
R L_{t}^{n}=E_{t, 0}^{n} \oplus E_{t, 1}^{n} \oplus \cdots \oplus E_{t, t}^{n}
$$

where $E_{t, i}^{n}$ is the $v_{t}^{+}$-eigenspace with eigenvalue $\lambda_{t, i}$ and $\operatorname{dim}_{R} E_{t, i}^{n}=\binom{n}{i}-\binom{n}{i-1}$.

## CONTENTS

Theorem 4.2.3. If $2 t>n$ and $0<t \leq n$, then $v_{t}^{-}$has $n-t+1$ positive eigenvalues. In particular we have the decomposition

$$
R L_{t}^{n}=E_{t, 0}^{n} \oplus E_{t, 1}^{n} \oplus \cdots \oplus E_{t, n-t-1}^{n} \oplus E_{t, n-t}^{n} .
$$

We prove that the eigenspaces $E_{t, i}^{n}$ are irreducible $S y m(n)$-invariant and that

$$
\epsilon_{t}^{(n) k}\left(E_{t, i}^{n}\right)=E_{k, i}^{n} .
$$

We observe that from these decompositions it is immediate to find two bases in $R L_{t}^{n}$ and $R L_{k}^{n}$, respectively, such that the associated matrix to $\epsilon_{t}^{(n) k}: R L_{t}^{n} \rightarrow R L_{k}^{n}$ is the diagonal form of $W_{t k}$ found by R.M. Wilson.

If we consider $W_{t k}$ as incidence matrix of the incidence structure $\mathcal{I}_{t k}^{n}$, we can see $W_{t k}^{T}$ as matrix associated to $\epsilon_{t}^{(n) k}$ restricted to the $\mathbb{Z}$-module $\mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n}$.

This suggested us to address the problem via linear algebra. Unluckly the result for the $\mathbb{Z}$ - modules is not immediate.

In section 4.3, looking at [4], we give a generating set $S_{i}^{n}$ of eigenvectors for the vector space $R L_{i}^{n}$, with $i=0, \cdots, n$, called polytopes.

For our approach an important role is played by the $\mathbb{Z}$-module $\mathbb{Z} L_{i}^{n}$ with basis $L_{i}^{n}$ $(i=0, \cdots, n)$ together with the submodule $\mathbb{Z} S_{i}^{n}$ generated by polytopes.

It is easy to prove that the following restrictions hold:

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\epsilon_{t}^{(n) k}: \mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{Z} L_{k}^{n}, & \partial_{k}^{(n) t}: \mathbb{Z} L_{k}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n} \\
\epsilon_{t}^{(n) k}: \mathbb{Z} S_{t}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{Z} S_{k}^{n}, & \partial_{k}^{(n) t}: \mathbb{Z} S_{k}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{Z} S_{t}^{n}
\end{array}
$$

We will determine the invariant factors of the matrix $W_{t k}^{T}$ finding the Smith group of $\epsilon_{t}^{(n) k}: \mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{Z} L_{k}^{n}$ (see Definition 2.4.21). The result is obtained constructing in section 4.4 a standard basis of polytopes. We report here the final results.

Theorem 4.5.1. Let $0 \leq t \leq k \leq n$ and $t+k \leq n$. Then the Smith group of

$$
\epsilon_{t}^{(n) k}: \mathbb{Z} S_{t}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{Z} S_{k}^{n}
$$

is isomorphic to

$$
\left(C_{d_{0}}\right)^{n_{0}} \times \cdots \times\left(C_{d_{t}}\right)^{n_{t}} \times \mathbb{Z}^{l}
$$

where $d_{i}=\binom{k-i}{t-i}, n_{i}=\binom{n}{i}-\binom{n}{i-1}$, for $i=0, \cdots$, t and $l=\binom{n}{k}-\binom{n}{t}$.
Theorem 4.5.4. Let $0 \leq t \leq k$ with $t+k \leq n$ and $s_{x_{i}}^{i}$ be a standard polytope of type $(i, i)$, for $i=0, \cdots, t$. Then $\mathbb{Z} S_{k, 0}^{n} \oplus \cdots \oplus \mathbb{Z} S_{k, t}^{n}$ is isomorphic to $\mathbb{Z} L_{k}^{n} \cap\left(E_{k, 0} \oplus \cdots \oplus E_{k, t}\right)$. An isomorphism is given by the map $\varphi_{t}^{(n) k}$ linear extension of the map defined on a standard basis of polytopes by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varphi_{t}^{(n) k}\left(\epsilon_{i}^{(n) k}\left(s_{x_{i}}^{i}\right)\right)=\epsilon_{i}^{(n) k}\left(x_{i}\right) \tag{1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Corollary 4.5.5. Let $0 \leq t \leq k \leq n$ with $t+k \leq n$ and $s_{x_{i}}^{i}$ be a standard polytope of type $(i, i)$, for $i=0, \cdots, t$. Then the map

$$
\varphi: \mathbb{Z} S_{k}^{n} / \epsilon_{t}^{(n) k}\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t}^{n}\right) \rightarrow \mathbb{Z} L_{k}^{n} / \epsilon_{t}^{(n) k}\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n}\right)
$$

defined by

$$
\varphi\left(\epsilon_{i}^{(n) k}\left(s_{x_{i}}^{i}\right)+\epsilon_{t}^{(n) k}\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t}^{n}\right)\right)=\epsilon_{i}^{(n) k}\left(x_{i}\right)+\epsilon_{t}^{(n) k}\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n}\right),
$$

and extended by linearity, is an isomorphism.

In Chapter 5 we introduce the submodule of $\mathbb{Z} L_{i}^{n}$ which consists of elements fixed by $G$, that is

$$
\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{i}^{n}\right)^{G}=\left\{v \in \mathbb{Z} L_{i}^{n}: v^{g}=v, \text { for any } g \in G\right\} ;
$$

## CONTENTS

we denote by $\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{i}^{n}\right)^{G}$ the module $\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{i}^{n}\right)^{G} \cap \mathbb{Z} S_{i}^{n}$, and we prove the following
Theorem 5.1.7. Let $0 \leq t \leq k$ and $t+k \leq n$. Then the Smith group of

$$
\epsilon_{t}^{(n) k}:\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t}^{n}\right)^{G} \rightarrow\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{k}^{n}\right)^{G}
$$

is isomorphic to

$$
\left(C_{d_{0}}\right)^{m_{0}} \times\left(C_{d_{1}}\right)^{m_{1}} \times \cdots \times\left(C_{d_{t}}\right)^{m_{t}} \times \mathbb{Z}^{l}
$$

where $d_{i}=\binom{k-i}{t-i}, m_{i}=\tau_{i}-\tau_{i-1}, i=0, \cdots, t$ and $l=\tau_{k}-\tau_{t}$.

In section 5.2 we restrict our attention to the case $t+k=n$ and we consider the $G$-isomorphism

$$
+_{N}: \mathbb{Q} L_{t}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{Q} L_{k}^{n}
$$

defined on basis elements in the following way: if $x \in L_{t}^{n}$ and $y$ is its complement in $\Omega$, the map $+_{N}$ is so defined

$$
+_{N}: x \rightarrow y .
$$

The map $+_{N}$ restricts to isomorphisms between $\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n}\right)^{G}$ and $\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{k}^{n}\right)^{G}$ and between $\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t}^{n}\right)^{G}$ and $\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{k}^{n}\right)^{G}$. This allows us to prove

Theorem 5.2.5. Let $0 \leq t \leq k \leq n$ and $t+k=n$. Then the groups $\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{k}^{n}\right)^{G} / \epsilon_{t}^{(n) k}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n}\right)^{G}\right)$ and $\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{k}^{n}\right)^{G} / \epsilon_{t}^{(n) k}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t}^{n}\right)^{G}\right)$ have the same order.

Actually we conjecture that, for any group $G \subseteq \operatorname{Sym}(n)$ and $t+k=n$, the Smith group of $\epsilon_{t}^{(n) k}:\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n}\right)^{G} \rightarrow\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{k}^{n}\right)^{G}$ is isomorphic to $\left(C_{d_{0}}\right)^{m_{0}} \times\left(C_{d_{1}}\right)^{m_{1}} \times \cdots \times\left(C_{d_{t}}\right)^{m_{t}}$.

Some evidence is given from results in section 5.3, in particular from Theorem 5.3.4. Moreover, using Magma Computational Algebra System (see Appendix A) we can see that, for $n \leq 11, t \leq k$ and $t+k=n$, our conjecture is true, while the statement is not true
in general for $t+k<n$ (see example 5.3.6). I would especially like to thank Prof. Pablo Spiga for the stimulating discussions we had and for his help with the computational load in the case $t+k=n$.

About the matrices $X_{t k}^{+}$we just prove that, for $0 \leq t \leq k=n-t$, the matrix

$$
M_{t k}^{+}=\left(X_{0 k}^{+}\left|X_{1 k}^{+}\right| \cdots \mid X_{t k}^{+}\right)
$$

has index one (see Definition 2.4.15) and rank $\tau_{t}$.

This is actually the analogue of the first step of Wilson's original proof given in [15]; this suggested us to follow Wilson's proof to get result for $X_{t k}^{+}$, but this is not possible. In his proof it is necessary that the matrix $M_{t k}$ has index 1 also for $t<k<n-t$ (see Proposition 3.1.3). This is not true in our case for matrix $M_{t k}^{+}$.

| $M^{G}$ | The centralizer algebra of $G$ on $M$ | p. 83 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\mathcal{B}_{\Omega^{t}}$ | $\left\{\sum_{x \in \Delta} x: \Delta \in \Omega^{t}\right\}$ | p. 17 |
| $\Omega$ | The set $\{1, \cdots, n\}$ | p. 16 |
| $\Omega^{t}$ | The set of orbits of $G$ on $L_{t}^{n}$ | p. 17 |
| $\mathbb{Q} L_{t}^{n}$ | The vector space with basis $L_{t}^{n}$ | p. 58 |
| $E_{t, i}^{n}$ | The $i^{\text {th }}$ eigenspace of $v^{+}$in $L_{t}^{n}$ | p. 54 |
| $G$ | A finite permutation group on $\Omega$ | p. 83 |
| $L^{n}$ | The power set of $\Omega$ | p. 16 |
| $L_{i}^{n}$ | The set of subsets of $\Omega$ of size $i$ | p. 16 |
| $n_{i}$ | $\binom{n}{i}-\binom{n}{i-1}$ | p. 8 |
| $n_{i}$ | $\binom{n}{i}-\binom{n}{i-1}$ | p. 53 |
| $t^{\prime}$ | $\min \{t, n-t\}$ | p. 54 |
| $W_{t k}$ | The incidence matrix associated to incidence structure $\left(L_{t}^{n}, L_{k}^{n}, \subsetneq\right)$ | p. 16 |

$X_{t k}^{+} \quad$ The matrix associated to $\epsilon_{t}^{(n) k}:\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n}\right)^{G} \rightarrow\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{k}^{n}\right)^{G}$ with respect p. 17 to bases $\mathcal{B}_{\Omega^{t}}$ and $\mathcal{B}_{\Omega^{k}}$
$X_{t k}^{-} \quad$ The matrix associated to $\partial_{k}^{(n) t}:\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{k}^{n}\right)^{G} \rightarrow\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n}\right)^{G}$ with respect p. 17 to bases $\mathcal{B}_{\Omega^{k}}$ and $\mathcal{B}_{\Omega^{t}}$

In this thesis, groups always act on the right and for group action we use exponential notation. Maps are applied on the left.

## CHAPTER 2

## Modules over a P.I.D. and Matrix Normal Form

In this Chapter we reorganize and deepen various concepts found in the literature. We consider the necessary prerequisites about modules and equivalence of matrices. For more references see [1], [5], [9] and [12].

### 2.1 Incidence matrices

For completeness we recall some well-known notion about incidence structures.

Definition 2.1.1. A finite incidence structure is a triple $\mathcal{I}_{\mathcal{P} \mathcal{B}}=(\mathcal{P}, \mathcal{B} ; \mathcal{I})$ where $\mathcal{P}$ and $\mathcal{B}$ are nonempty finite sets and $\mathcal{I} \subseteq \mathcal{P} \times \mathcal{B}$. The sets $\mathcal{P}$ and $\mathcal{B}$ are called the point set and the block set of $I_{\mathcal{P} \mathcal{B}}$, respectively, and their elements are called points and blocks. The set $\mathcal{I}$ is called the incidence relation.

Definition 2.1.2. An incidence matrix of the incidence structure $I_{\mathcal{P}_{\mathcal{B}}}$ is the $(0,1)$-matrix whose rows are indexed by the points of $I_{\mathcal{P}_{\mathcal{B}}}$, columns are indexed by the blocks of $I_{\mathcal{P}_{\mathcal{B}}}$ and the $(p, b)$-entry is equal to 1 if and only if $(p, b) \in I$.

In this work we deal with particular incidence structure, which we are going to define now.

Given $\Omega=\{1,2, \cdots, n\}$ a finite set, we denote by $L^{n}$ the power set of $\Omega$ and we partition it into the sets $L_{i}^{n}$, for $0 \leq i \leq n$, where $L_{i}^{n}$ is the set of subsets of $\Omega$ of size $i$; i.e. the elements of $L_{i}^{n}$ are the $i$-subsets of $\Omega$.

Put $\mathcal{P}=L_{t}^{n}, \mathcal{B}=L_{k}^{n}$ and $I$ the containment relation for subsets of $\Omega$, that is $(T, K) \in I$ if and only if $T \subseteq K$; the triple $I_{t k}^{n}=\left(L_{t}^{n}, L_{k}^{n} ; \subseteq\right)$ is an incidence structure.

The incidence matrix associated to this incidence structure is denoted by $W_{t k}(n)$ and it is called the incidence matrix of $t$-subsets vs. $k$-subsets of $\Omega$. When there is no chance of confusion, we will write $W_{t k}$ for $W_{t k}(n)$.

We conclude this section with the introduction of a concept useful later on. A tactical decomposition of an incidence structure $\mathcal{I}_{\mathcal{P} \mathcal{B}}=(\mathcal{P}, \mathcal{B} ; \mathcal{I})$ is a partition of $\mathcal{P}$ into disjoint point sets (called the point classes) $\Delta$, together with a partition of $\mathcal{B}$ into disjoint block sets (block classes) $\Gamma$, such that for any point class $\Delta$ and any block class $\Gamma$, the number of points of $\Delta$ on a block $B \in \Gamma$ depends only on $\Delta$ and $\Gamma$, not on $B$, and can hence be denoted by $y_{\Gamma, \Delta}$. Dually, the number of blocks of $\Gamma$ through $P \in \Delta$ depends only on $\Gamma$ and $\Delta$, and can be denoted by $x_{\Delta, \Gamma}$.

Now let $I_{\mathcal{P}_{\mathcal{B}}}^{\prime}$ be a tactical decomposition of a finite incidence structure $I_{\mathcal{P}_{\mathcal{B}}}$ and let the (point and block) classes of $I_{\mathcal{P}_{\mathcal{B}}}^{\prime}$ be numbered in an arbitrary but fixed way: $\Delta_{1}, \cdots, \Delta_{r}$ and $\Gamma_{1}, \cdots, \Gamma_{s}$. Then we define two matrices

$$
Y=\left(y_{\Gamma_{i}, \Delta_{j}}\right) \quad \text { and } \quad X=\left(x_{\Delta_{j}, \Gamma_{i}}\right)
$$

$Y$ and $X$ are called incidence matrices of $\mathcal{I}_{\mathcal{P} \mathcal{B}}^{\prime}$, with respect to the chosen numbering of the $I_{\mathcal{P}_{\mathcal{B}}}^{\prime}$-classes. Clearly, $Y$ and $X$ are integral $s \times r$ - and $r \times s$-matrices, respectively.

Now, if we denote by $\operatorname{Sym}(n)$ the symmetric group on $\Omega$, the action of $\operatorname{Sym}(n)$ is extended
in natural way to $L_{i}^{n}$. Formally, if $g \in \operatorname{Sym}(n)$ and $\alpha_{1}, \cdots \alpha_{i} \in \Omega$ then

$$
\left\{\alpha_{1}, \cdots, \alpha_{i}\right\}^{g}=\left\{\alpha_{1}^{g}, \cdots, \alpha_{i}^{g}\right\}
$$

Taken $G \subseteq \operatorname{Sym}(n)$ a permutation group on $\Omega$, we denote by $\tau_{i}$ the number of orbits of $G$ on $L_{i}^{n}$. For $0 \leq t \leq k \leq n$, we put $\Omega^{t}=\left\{\Delta_{1}, \cdots, \Delta_{\tau_{t}}\right\}$ and $\Omega^{k}=\left\{\Gamma_{1}, \cdots, \Gamma_{\tau_{k}}\right\}$ the $G$-orbits sets on $L_{t}^{n}$ and $L_{k}^{n}$, respectively. The pair $\left(\Omega^{t}, \Omega^{k}\right)$ is a tactical decomposition of $I_{t k}^{n}$.

We denote by $X_{t k}^{+}=\left(x_{i j}^{+}\right)$and $X_{t k}^{-}=\left(x_{j i}^{-}\right)$the incidence matrices of $\left(\Omega^{t}, \Omega^{k}\right)$, where

$$
x_{i j}^{+}=\mid\left\{x \in \Delta_{j}: x \subseteq y, \text { for one fixed } y \in \Gamma_{i}\right\} \mid
$$

and

$$
x_{j i}^{-}=\mid\left\{y \in \Gamma_{i}: x \subseteq y, \text { for one fixed } x \in \Delta_{j}\right\} \mid
$$

### 2.2 Equivalence of matrices with entries in a P.I.D.

In the following $D$ is a principal ideal domain. Here we give some results of Module Theory (see [9]).

Definition 2.2.1. Let $A$ and $B$ be two matrices over $D$ of the same size $m \times n$. Then $B$ is said to be equivalent to $A$ (over $D$ ), and we write $A \sim B$, if there exist invertible matrices $Q \in G L_{m}(D)$ and $P \in G L_{n}(D)$ such that $A=Q^{-1} B P$.

In particular, a matrix $B \in \operatorname{Mat}_{m, n}(D)$ is said to be a diagonal form for the matrix $A$, if $A \sim B$ and the entry $(i, j)$ is 0 when $i \neq j$. Observe that in general $m \neq n$; so we have the following possible cases for diagonal matrices

$$
\left(\begin{array}{ccccc}
\lambda_{1} & & &  \tag{2.1}\\
& \lambda_{2} & & \\
& & \cdots & \\
& & \cdots & \lambda_{n} \\
0 & 0 & \cdots & 0 \\
\cdots & \cdots & \cdots & \cdots \\
0 & 0 & \cdots & 0
\end{array}\right) \text { if } m>n,\left(\begin{array}{lllllll}
\lambda_{1} & & & & 0 & \cdots & 0 \\
& \lambda_{2} & & & 0 & \cdots & 0 \\
& & \cdots & & 0 & \cdots & 0 \\
& & & \lambda_{m} & 0 & \cdots & 0
\end{array}\right) \text { if } m<n
$$

or

$$
\left(\begin{array}{llll}
\lambda_{1} & & &  \tag{2.2}\\
& \lambda_{2} & & \\
& & \ldots & \\
& & & \lambda_{m}
\end{array}\right) \text { if } m=n
$$

In general, if s the minimum between m and n , we will write these matrices

$$
\operatorname{diag}\left(\lambda_{1}, \cdots, \lambda_{s}\right)
$$

The relation defined in 2.2.1 is an equivalence relation. It is possible to obtain equivalent matrices by appropriate elementary row and column operations (see [9], Chapter 7)

Definition 2.2.2. We say that the matrix $B \in \operatorname{Mat}_{m, n}(D)$ is in Smith Normal Form if $B=\operatorname{diag}\left(d_{1}, \cdots, d_{s}\right)$ such that the entry $d_{i}$ divides $d_{i+1}$. If $A \in M a t_{m, n}(D)$ is equivalent to $B=\operatorname{diag}\left(d_{1}, \cdots, d_{s}\right)$, then the sequence $d_{1}, \cdots, d_{s}$ is called a sequence of invariant factors of $A$ over $D$.

We observe that the sequence of invariant factors is unique up to multiplication by units.

We will make use of the two following Theorems, we give them without proof (see [9]).

Theorem 2.2.3. Every matrix $A=\left(a_{i j}\right) \in \operatorname{Mat}_{m, n}(D)$ is equivalent to a matrix in Smith Normal Form over D.

Theorem 2.2.4. Two $m \times n$ matrices over a principal ideal domain $D$ are equivalent over $D$ if and only if they have the same sequence of invariant factors over $D$ up to units.

### 2.3 Finitely Generated Modules over a P.I.D.

Throughout $D$ denotes a P.I.D. We assume that concepts about direct sums, linear independence and free modules are known (see [9]). We are now in a position to state and prove the theorem on the structure of the finitely generated modules over a P.I.D. $D$ (see Theorem 2.3.8). It leads, in fact, to a classification of such modules (in terms of certain sequences of elements of $D$ ), achieved by expressing them as direct sums of certain cyclic submodules.

Despite the fact that the theorem is well known, it is also the theoretical framework of this thesis and, accordingly, we will report it with proof. Our reference for the content of this section is [9].

Theorem 2.3.1. Let $M$ be a free $D$-module of finite rank $n$, and $N$ a submodule of $M$. Then there exists a basis $\left\{v_{1}, . ., v_{n}\right\}$ of $M$ and $d_{1}, \cdots, d_{n} \in D$ such that
(1) the non-zero elements of $\left\{d_{1} v_{1}, \cdots, d_{n} v_{n}\right\}$ form a basis for $N$ and
(2) $d_{1}\left|d_{2}\right| \cdots \mid d_{n}$

## Proof.

Let N be a submodule of a free $D$-module M and $\mathcal{B}=\left\{v_{1}, \cdots, v_{n}\right\}$ be a basis of M. If $N=\{0\}$, then $\left\{d_{1} v_{1}, \cdots, d_{n} v_{n}\right\}$, where $d_{i}=0$, is a basis of N .

If $N \neq\{0\}, \mathrm{N}$ is free. Let now $C=\left\{w_{1}, \cdots w_{m}\right\}$ be a basis of N . Then $w_{i}=\sum_{j=1}^{n} a_{j i} v_{j}$. Let $\alpha: N \rightarrow M$ be the map such that $\alpha(w)=w$. The matrix associated to $\alpha$ with respect to $C$ and $\mathcal{B}$ of N and M is $A=\left(a_{j i}\right)$.

Then there exist two invertible matrices $Q$ and $P$ over $D$ such that $B=Q^{-1} A P=$ $\operatorname{diag}\left(d_{1}, \cdots, d_{m}\right)$ and $d_{1}\left|d_{2}\right| \cdots \mid d_{m}$ (see Theorem 2.2.3). Q and P determine two new bases $\mathcal{B}^{\prime}=\left\{v_{1}^{\prime}, \cdots, v_{n}^{\prime}\right\}$ and $C^{\prime}=\left\{w_{1}^{\prime}, \cdots, w_{m}^{\prime}\right\}$ of M and N such that

$$
v_{i}^{\prime}=\sum_{j=1}^{n} q_{j i} v_{j}
$$

and

$$
w_{i}^{\prime}=\sum_{j=1}^{m} p_{j i} w_{j}
$$

The elements $v_{i}$ are expressed in terms of the $v_{j}^{\prime}$ by means of the matrix $Q^{-1}$. The matrix of $\alpha$ with respect to $C^{\prime}$ and $\mathcal{B}^{\prime}$ is $B=Q^{-1} A P$, which is the Smith Normal Form of $A$. In particular

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
w_{1}^{\prime}=d_{1} v_{1}^{\prime}  \tag{2.3}\\
\vdots \\
w_{m}^{\prime}=d_{m} v_{m}^{\prime}
\end{array}\right.
$$

Put $d_{m+1}=\cdots=d_{n}=0$ we have the claim.
Definition 2.3.2. If $M$ is a D-module, then the annihilator of $M$, denoted Ann( $M$ ), is defined by

$$
\operatorname{Ann}(M)=\{d \in D: d m=0 \text { for all } m \in M\}
$$

### 2.3 Finitely Generated Modules over a P.I.D.

Definition 2.3.3. Let $M$ be a D-module. We say that $m \in M$ is a torsion element if there exists $d \neq 0 \in D$ such that $d m=0$. Let $T$ be the set of torsion elements of $M$, i.e.

$$
T=\{m \in M: \exists d \neq 0 \in \mathbb{Z} \text { s.t. } d m=0\} .
$$

$M$ is said to be torsion-free if $T=\{0\}$, and $M$ is a torsion module if $M=T$.
Theorem 2.3.4. Let $M$ be a D-module and let $T$ be the set of torsion elements of $M$. Then

1. $T$ is a submodule of $M$, called the torsion submodule.
2. $M / T$ is torsion-free.

Proof. 1. Clearly $0 \in T$. Let $t_{1}, t_{2} \in T$, then by definition there exist non-zero $r_{1}, r_{2} \in D$ such that $r_{1} t_{1}=r_{2} t_{2}=0$. Hence $r_{1} r_{2}\left(t_{1}-t_{2}\right)=\left(r_{2} r_{1}\right) t_{1}-\left(r_{1} r_{2}\right) t_{2}=0$. Since $D$ has no zero divisors, $r_{1} r_{2} \neq 0$ and so $t_{1}-t_{2} \in T$. Furthermore, if $r \in D$, then $r_{1}\left(r t_{1}\right)=r\left(r_{1} t_{1}\right)=0$, and $r t_{1} \in T$.
2. Suppose that $r \neq 0 \in D$ and $r(m+T)=T \in M / T$. Then $r m \in T$, so there is $s \neq 0 \in D$ with $(s r) m=s(r m)=0$. Since $s r \neq 0$, it follows that $m \in T$, i.e. $m+T=T \in M / T$.

Definition 2.3.5. Let $M$ be a cyclic D-module and let Ann(M) be the annihilator of $M$. Since $D$ is a principal ideal domain, Ann $(M)=D d$, where $d \in D$. Then we say that $d$ is the order of $M$.

We will deal always with finitely generated $D$-module. We just remind
Lemma 2.3.6. Every finitely generated D-module is a homomorphic image of a free $D$-module.

Lemma 2.3.7. Let $L=L_{1} \oplus \cdots \oplus L_{t}$ be an internal direct sum of $D$-submodules. For each $i$, let $N_{i}$ be a submodule of $L_{i}$ and $N=N_{1} \oplus \cdots \oplus N_{t}$. Then, if $v: L \rightarrow \frac{L}{N}$ is the natural epimorphism, we have $\frac{L}{N}=v(L)=v\left(L_{1}\right) \oplus \cdots \oplus v\left(L_{t}\right)$ and $v\left(L_{i}\right) \cong \frac{L_{i}}{N_{i}}$

We are now ready to prove
Theorem 2.3.8. Let $M$ be a finitely generated D-module. Then $M$ can be expressed as an internal direct sum $M=M_{1} \oplus \cdots \oplus M_{t}, t \geq 0$, such that $M_{i}$ is a non-trivial cyclic submodule of $M$ of order $d_{i}$ and $d_{1}\left|d_{2}\right| \cdots \mid d_{t}$.

Proof. Since M is a finitely generated module, by Lemma 2.3.6 there exists a free module V such that $\phi: V \rightarrow M$ is an epimorphism. Put $W=\operatorname{Ker} \phi \subseteq V$, there exists an isomorphism $\psi: \frac{V}{W} \rightarrow M$.

Let now $\mathcal{B}=\left\{v_{1}, \cdots, v_{n}\right\}$ be a basis of V , then $V=D v_{1} \oplus \cdots \oplus D v_{n}$ and $W \subseteq V$ is free. So there exist $c_{1}, \cdots, c_{n}$ such that $c_{1}|\cdots| c_{n}$ and the non-zero elements of $\left\{c_{1} v_{1}, \cdots, c_{n} v_{n}\right\}$ form a basis of W, by Theorem 2.3.1. Then $W=D\left(c_{1} v_{1}\right) \oplus \cdots \oplus D\left(c_{n} v_{n}\right)$. If $v: V \rightarrow \frac{V}{W}$ is the canonical epimorphism, then we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{V}{W}=v(V)=v\left(D v_{1}\right) \oplus \cdots \oplus v\left(D v_{n}\right)=D v\left(v_{1}\right) \oplus \cdots \oplus D v\left(v_{n}\right) \tag{2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

In particolar $v\left(v_{i}\right)$ has order $c_{i}$. Actually, $d v\left(v_{i}\right)=0$, where $0 \neq d \in D$ if and only if $v\left(d v_{i}\right)=0$ if and only if $d v_{i} \in W=\operatorname{Ker} v$ if and only if $d v_{i} \in D\left(c_{i} v_{i}\right)$ (because it belongs to $W \cap D v_{i}$ ) if and only if $c_{i} \mid d$.

Since $\psi$ is an isomorphism, it maps the direct decomposition of $V / W$ into a direct decomposition of $M$.

Let u be the last integer i such that $c_{i}$ is a unit. Then $c_{1}, \cdots, c_{u}$ are all units by the divisibility condition, and the corresponding modules in Equation 2.4 are exactly the
zero modules and can be omitted. Therefore, $t=n-u$ and $M=M_{1} \oplus \cdots \oplus M_{t}$, where $M_{i}=D \psi v\left(v_{u+i}\right)=D \phi\left(v_{u+i}\right)$ is a non-trivial cyclic module of order $d_{i}=c_{u+i}$ and $d_{1}\left|d_{2}\right| \cdots \mid d_{t}$. This concludes the proof.

If $M=M_{1} \oplus \cdots \oplus M_{s}=M_{1}^{\prime} \oplus \cdots \oplus M_{t}^{\prime}$ are two direct decompositions of $M$ into non-trivial cyclic modules $M_{i}$ of order $d_{i}$ and $M_{i}^{\prime}$ of order $d_{i}^{\prime}$ such that $d_{1}\left|d_{2}\right| \cdots \mid d_{s}$ and $d_{1}^{\prime}\left|d_{2}^{\prime}\right| \cdots \mid d_{t}^{\prime}$, then $s=t$ and $D d_{i}=D d_{i}^{\prime}$, for $i=1, \cdots, s$. In particular $d_{i}$ and $d_{i}^{\prime}$ are associates.

The sequence $d_{1}, d_{2}, \cdots, d_{s}$ is called sequence of invariant factors of $M$, unique up to multiplication by units.

Corollary 2.3.9. Let $M$ be a finitely generated D-module. Then if $T$ is the torsion submodule of $M$, we have $M=T \oplus V$, where $V$ is a free submodule of finite rank.

### 2.4 Pure modules and index of submodules

In this section we introduce the concept of pure module and of index of a matrix (see [3], [12] and [15]). These topics play a fundamental role in our proof of "Wilson's Theorem" (Theorem 4.5.4 ). For this reason we reorganize known notions, integrating them with useful properties for achieve our purpose. We observe that we will use properties of pure module, while R.M. Wilson considers the concept of index of a matrix. In Proposition 2.4.17 is pointed out the relation between purity and index of a matrix.

In the sequel we take $D=\mathbb{Z}$, that is we consider $\mathbb{Z}$-modules, and $M$ will denote a $\mathbb{Z}$-module.

Definition 2.4.1. [12] Let $M_{1}$ be a submodule of $M$. Then we say that $M_{1}$ is a pure submodule of $M$ if $M_{1} \cap a M=a M_{1}$, for every $a \in \mathbb{Z}$.

Example 2.4.2. Given $M=\mathbb{Z} \times \mathbb{Z}$, let $N$ and $L$ be the submodules generated by $(1,0)$ and $(2,0)$ respectively. Then $N$ is pure in $M$, while $L$ is not pure. To see this it is enough to take $a=4$. The element $(4,0)=4(1,0)=2(2,0) \in L \cap 4 M$, but it is not in $4 L$.

We often will make use of the following remark.

Remark 2.4.3. We observe that the inclusion $a M_{1} \subseteq M_{1} \cap a M$ is always true; moreover, the equality is trivial if $a=0$.

Proposition 2.4.4. Let $M_{1}$ and $M_{2}$ be submodules of $M$ such that $M_{1} \subseteq M_{2}$. If $M_{1}$ is a pure submodule of $M$, then it is also a pure submodule of $M_{2}$.

Proof. Since $M_{1} \cap a M=a M_{1}$, for every $a \in \mathbb{Z}$, and $a M_{2} \subseteq a M$, we have $M_{1} \cap a M_{2} \subseteq$ $M_{1} \cap a M=a M_{1}$. The claim follows.

Proposition 2.4.5. Let $M_{2}$ be a pure submodule of $M$ and let $M_{1}$ be a pure submodule of $M_{2}$. Then $M_{1}$ is a pure submodule of $M$.

Proof. Let $a \in \mathbb{Z} \backslash\{0\}$, by hypothesis $M_{1} \cap a M_{2}=a M_{1}$ and $M_{2} \cap a M=a M_{2}$. Let $x \in M_{1} \cap a M$, since $M_{1} \subseteq M_{2}$, then $x \in M_{2} \cap a M=a M_{2}$, so $x \in M_{1} \cap a M_{2}=a M_{1}$. It follows that $M_{1} \cap a M \subseteq a M_{1}$.

Proposition 2.4.6. Let $M_{1}, M_{2}$ be $\mathbb{Z}$-modules, and $\rho: M_{1} \rightarrow M_{2}$ an isomorphism. If a submodule $L_{1}$ of $M_{1}$ is pure in $M_{1}$ then $L_{2}=\rho\left(L_{1}\right)$ is pure in $M_{2}$.

Proof. Let $a \in \mathbb{Z} \backslash\{0\}$ and $y \in L_{2} \cap a M_{2}$. There exist $x \in L_{1}$ and $m_{2} \in M_{2}$ such that $\rho(x)=y$ and $y=a m_{2}$. But $m_{2}=\rho\left(m_{1}\right)$ for some $m_{1} \in M_{1}$, it follows that $y=a \rho\left(m_{1}\right)=\rho\left(a m_{1}\right)$ and so $y=\rho\left(a m_{1}\right)=\rho(x)$. We conclude that $a m_{1}=x$ by injectivity of $\rho$. Therefore, $x \in L_{1} \cap a M_{1}=a L_{1}$, by purity of $L_{1}$ in $M_{1}$, then there exists $l_{1} \in L_{1}$ such that $x=a l_{1}$. Finally, $y=\rho(x)=a \rho\left(l_{1}\right) \in a L_{2}$.

For later use, we focus our attention on properties of purity when $M$ is a free $\mathbb{Z}$-module.
Proposition 2.4.7. Let $M$ be a free $\mathbb{Z}$-module of rank $n$ and let $M_{i}, i \in I$, be a non-empty family of pure submodules of $M$. Then $F=\bigcap_{i \in I} M_{i}$ is a pure submodule of $M$.

Proof. It is enough to prove that $F \cap a M \subseteq a F$, for every $a \in \mathbb{Z}$. As usual we suppose $a \neq 0$. Then let $f \in F \cap a M$, there is $m \in M$ such that $f=a m$ and since $f \in F$, we have $f \in M_{i}, i \in I$. But $M_{i} \cap a M=a M_{i}$, hence there are $m_{i} \in M_{i}$ such that $f=a m_{i}$. We consider $i \neq j$, by $f=a m_{i}=a m_{j}$, we deduce that $a\left(m_{i}-m_{j}\right)=0 \in M$, where $a \neq 0$. So $m_{i}=m_{j}$, for each $i, j \in I$, because M is torsion-free. It follows that $m_{j} \in \cap_{i \in I} M_{i}$, thus $f=a m_{j} \in a F$.

Here we introduce an operator of closure of modules. This relates the concept of pure module to that of index of a matrix (see Definition 2.4.15).

Definition 2.4.8. [3] Let $M$ be a free $\mathbb{Z}$-module of rank $n$ and let $F$ be a submodule of $M$. Then the pure closure of $F$ in $M$ is the module $\bar{F}$ defined as the intersection of all pure submodules of $M$ containing $F$. Clearly if $F$ is a pure submodule of $M$, we have $\bar{F}=F$.

Proposition 2.4.9. [3] Let $M$ be a free $\mathbb{Z}$-module of rank $n$ and let $F$ be a submodule of M. Then

$$
\bar{F}=\{l \in M: \exists c \in \mathbb{Z} \backslash\{0\} \text { s.t. } c l \in F\} .
$$

Proof. Put $L=\{l \in M: \exists c \in \mathbb{Z} \backslash\{0\}$ s.t. $c l \in F\}$. We want to prove $\bar{F}=L$. Clearly $F \subseteq L$ and so $\bar{F} \subseteq \bar{L}$. We prove that L is a pure submodule of M , i.e. $L \cap a M \subseteq a L$, for any $a \in \mathbb{Z} \backslash\{0\}$, so we can deduce that $\bar{F} \subseteq L$. For $l \in L \cap a M$, there is $m \in M$ such that $l=a m$; as $l \in L$, there exists $c \in \mathbb{Z} \backslash\{0\}$ such that $c l \in F$. Thus, $c l=a c m \in F$, with $a c \neq 0$, and we deduce that $m \in L$ by definition. We conclude that $l=a m \in a L$. It follows that $L$ is a pure submodule of $M$ and, by definition of purity, $\bar{L}=L$. Hence $\bar{F} \subseteq L$.

Conversely, if $l \in L$, then there is $a \in \mathbb{Z} \backslash\{0\}$ such that $a l \in F$. So $a l \in a M \cap \bar{F}=a \bar{F}$. We conclude that there exists $f \in \bar{F}$ such that $a l=a f$, hence $l=f$, as M is torsion free. Thus $L \subseteq \bar{F}$.

We give the definition of index of submodules.
Definition 2.4.10. Let $M$ be a free $\mathbb{Z}$-module of rank $n$ and let $F$ be a submodule of $M$. The index of $F$ is the index of $F$ as a subgroup of $\bar{F}$.

Note that $F$ is pure in $M$ if and only if $F$ has index 1 .

The following results prove that a pure submodule $F$ of a free module $M$ coincides with $M$ if $F$ and $M$ have the same rank (Lemma 2.4.14).

Theorem 2.4.11. Let $M$ be a free $\mathbb{Z}$-module of rank $n$ and let $F$ be a submodule of $M$ of rank $r$. Then there exist a basis $\left\{v_{1}, \cdots, v_{n}\right\}$ of $M$ and non-zero integers $d_{1}, \cdots, d_{r}$ such that $\left\{d_{1} v_{1}, \cdots, d_{r} v_{r}\right\}$ and $\left\{v_{1}, \cdots, v_{r}\right\}$ are bases for $F$ and $\bar{F}$, respectively.

Proof. By Theorem 2.3.1, there exist a basis $\left\{v_{1}, \cdots, v_{n}\right\}$ of M and non-zero integers $d_{1}, \cdots, d_{r}$ such that $\left\{d_{1} v_{1}, \cdots, d_{r} v_{r}\right\}$ is a basis of F .

Now, we prove that $\left\{v_{1}, \cdots, v_{r}\right\}$ is a basis for $\bar{F}$. Since $d_{i} v_{i} \in F$, for $i=1, \cdots, r$, we have $v_{i} \in \bar{F}$, by Proposition 2.4.9. Thus it is enough to prove that $\bar{F}=\operatorname{span}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left\{v_{1}, \cdots, v_{r}\right\}$. Let $x \in \bar{F}$, then there exists a non-zero integer $c$ such that $c x \in F$. The vector $c x$ is a linear combination of elements of a $F$-basis, i.e. $c x=\sum_{i=1}^{r} k_{i} d_{i} v_{i}$. On the other hand, $x \in M$, so $x=\sum_{i=1}^{n} h_{i} v_{i}$. It follows that $c x=\sum_{i=1}^{n} c h_{i} v_{i}$ and $c h_{i}=k_{i} d_{i}$, for $i=1, \cdots, r$ and $h_{r+1}=\cdots=h_{n}=0$. We conclude that $x=\sum_{i=1}^{r} h_{i} v_{i}$ is a linear combination of vectors $v_{1}, \cdots, v_{r}$. Thus $x \in \operatorname{span}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left\{v_{1}, \cdots, v_{r}\right\}$.

Proposition 2.4.12. [15] Let $M$ be a free $\mathbb{Z}$-module of rankn. Let $F$ and $L$ be submodules of $M$ such that $F \subseteq L$ and $F$ is pure in $M$. Then the quotient $L / F$ is a free $\mathbb{Z}$-module.

Proof. Let $l+F \in L / F$ be a torsion element, then there exists $c \in \mathbb{Z} \backslash\{0\}$ such that $c \cdot(l+F)=F$. It follows that $c l \in F$, so $l \in \bar{F}=F$.

Note that in general the quotient of free modules is not free.
Proposition 2.4.13. Let $M$ be a free $\mathbb{Z}$-module of rank $n$ and let $F, L$ be submodules of $M$. If $F$ is pure in $M$, then any $\mathbb{Z}$-basis of $F$ can be extended to $a \mathbb{Z}$-basis of $F+L$ by adjoining elements of $L$.

Proof. $F \subseteq F+L \subseteq M$ and by hypothesis $F$ is pure in M. Then, by proprosition 2.4.12, $(F+L) / F$ is a free $\mathbb{Z}$-module, so there exists a basis $\left\{l_{1}+F, l_{2}+F, \cdots, l_{r}+F\right\}$, where $\left\{l_{1}, l_{2}, \cdots, l_{r}\right\} \subseteq L$. Let $\left\{f_{1}, f_{2}, \cdots, f_{t}\right\}$ be a basis of the free module $F$. Now we prove that $\left\{f_{1}, \cdots, f_{t}, l_{1}, \cdots, l_{r}\right\}$ is a basis of $F+L$.

Let $m \in F+L$, then $m+F=\sum_{i=1}^{r} h_{i}\left(l_{i}+F\right)=\left(\sum_{i=1}^{r} h_{i} l_{i}\right)+F$, it follows that $m-\sum_{i=1}^{r} h_{i} l_{i} \in F$. Hence $m-\sum_{i=1}^{r} h_{i} l_{i}=\sum_{j=1}^{t} k_{j} f_{j}$, and $m=\sum_{j=1}^{t} k_{j} f_{j}+\sum_{i=1}^{r} h_{i} l_{i}$.

The vectors $f_{1}, \cdots, f_{t}, l_{1}, \cdots, l_{r}$ are linearly independent, indeed if $k_{1} f_{1}+\cdots+k_{t} f_{t}+h_{1} l_{1}+$ $\cdots+h_{r} l_{r}=0$, then $F=\left(k_{1} f_{1}+\cdots+k_{t} f_{t}+h_{1} l_{1}+\cdots+h_{r} l_{r}\right)+F=\left(h_{1} l_{1}+\cdots+h_{r} l_{r}\right)+F=$ $h_{1}\left(l_{1}+F\right)+\cdots+h_{r}\left(l_{r}+F\right)$. Since $\left\{l_{1}+F, l_{2}+F, \cdots, l_{r}+F\right\}$ is a basis for the quotient module, $h_{i}=0$, for $i=1, \cdots, r$. It follows that $k_{1} f_{1}+\cdots+k_{t} f_{t}=0$, so $k_{j}=0$ because $\left\{f_{1}, f_{2}, \cdots, f_{t}\right\}$ is a basis of $F$.

The following proposition is very important in our Wilson's Theorem proof.
Lemma 2.4.14. [3] Let $M$ be a free $\mathbb{Z}$-module of rank $n$. If $F$ and $L$ are submodules of M such that

1. $F \subseteq L$,
2. $F$ is pure in $M$,
3. $\operatorname{rank}(F)=\operatorname{rank}(L)$,
then $F=L$.

Proof. We consider the submodule $L=F+L$. By Proposition 2.4.13, any basis of F can be extended to a basis of $L$ adjoining elements of $L$. But $F$ and $L$ have the same rank, so any basis of $F$ is a basis of $L$.

Now we return to the matrices with coefficient in $\mathbb{Z}$ and we work on modules generated by their rows.

Let $A$ be an integral matrix $m \times n$. Then we use $r o w_{\mathbb{Z}}(A)$ to denote the $\mathbb{Z}$-module spanned by the row vectors of $A$, and $\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Q}}(A)$ to denote the vector space over $\mathbb{Q}$, generated by the rows of $A$.

Definition 2.4.15. [15] We define the index of an integral matrix $A$ to be the index of $\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}(A)$ as a subgroup of the module $Z(A)$ of all integral vectors which belong to $r_{0} w_{\mathbb{Q}}(A)$.

We observe that if $A$ has index 1 , then every integral vector which is a rational linear combination of the rows of A is already an integral linear combination of the rows of A , that is $\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}(A)$ is a pure submodule of $\mathbb{Z}^{n}$.

About index we recall the proposition proved by Wilson below.

Proposition 2.4.16. [15] Let A be an integral matrix. Then A has index 1 if and only if $A=A B A$ for some integral matrix $B$.

Proof. Suppose $A=A B A$ and let $x$ be an integral vector in $r_{\text {ow }}^{Q}(A)$, say $x=y A$, where $y$ is rational. Then

$$
x=y A=y A B A=(x B) A=z A
$$

where $z$ is integral; so $x \in \operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}(A)$ and this shows that $A$ has index 1 .

Conversely, suppose $E A F=D$, where $E, F$ are unimodular and $D$ is diagonal with entries 0 and 1 . Say $A$ is $m \times n$. If $m \leq n$, let $F^{\prime}=F$ and $E^{\prime}$ be obtained from $E$ by adjoining $(n-m)$ rows of zeros; if $m \geq n$, let $E^{\prime}=E$ and let $F^{\prime}$ be obtained from $F$ by adjoining $(m-n)$ columns of zeros. In either case, $A F^{\prime} E^{\prime} A=A$.

Proposition 2.4.17. Let $A$ be an integral matrix of size $s \times n$. Put $F=\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}(A)$. Then $\bar{F}=Z(A)$ in $\mathbb{Z}^{n}$.

Proof. Let $\left\{A_{1}, \cdots, A_{s}\right\}$ be the rows of $A$, that is a generating set of $\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}(A)$. First we prove that $\bar{F} \subseteq Z(A)$. Let $\mathbf{x} \in \bar{F}$, then there exists $c \neq 0 \in \mathbb{Z}$ such that $c \mathbf{x} \in F \subseteq Z(A) \subseteq$ $\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Q}}(A)$. Since $r o w_{\mathbb{Q}}(A)$ is a vector space and $c \neq 0$ we have $\mathbf{x}=c^{-1}(c \mathbf{x}) \in \operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Q}}(A)$. So $\mathbf{x} \in Z(A)$. Conversely, let $\mathbf{y} \in Z(A)$, then $\mathbf{y} \in \mathbb{Z}^{n} \cap \operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Q}}(A)$. Hence $\mathbf{y}=q_{1} A_{1}+\cdots+q_{s} A_{s}$, where $q_{i} \in \mathbb{Q}$, and there exists $c \neq 0 \in \mathbb{Z}$ such that $c \mathbf{y} \in \operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}(A)=F$. We conclude that $\mathbf{y} \in \bar{F}$.

The following proposition allows to link the non-zero invariant factors of a matrix $A$ with the index of the module generated by its rows.

Proposition 2.4.18. Let $B$ be a diagonal form of an integral matrix $A$ and suppose that it has non-zero entries $d_{1}, d_{2}, \cdots, d_{r}$. Then the group $\frac{Z(A)}{r_{z}(A)}$ is finite and is isomorphic to the direct sum of cyclic groups of orders $d_{1}, d_{2}, \cdots, d_{r}$.

Proof. We want to apply Lemma 2.3.7. We put $F=\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}(A)$; by Proposition 2.4.17 we have that $\bar{F}=Z(A)$.

Let $\alpha: \mathbb{Z}^{m} \rightarrow \mathbb{Z}^{n}$ be the map induced by $A^{T}$ with respect to the canonical bases, so defined

$$
\left(\begin{array}{c}
x_{1} \\
\cdots \\
x_{m}
\end{array}\right) \rightarrow A^{T}\left(\begin{array}{c}
x_{1} \\
\cdots \\
x_{m}
\end{array}\right)
$$

$\operatorname{Im} \alpha=\operatorname{span}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(A^{T} e_{1}, \cdots, A^{T} e_{m}\right)=\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}(A)$, where $\left\{e_{1}, \cdots, e_{m}\right\}$ is a canonical basis of $\mathbb{Z}^{m}$. Let $A^{T} \sim B=\operatorname{diag}\left(d_{1}, \cdots, d_{r}\right)$, where $d_{1}, \cdots, d_{r}$ are non-zero integers. So there exist two bases $\left\{w_{1}, \cdots, w_{m}\right\}$ di $\mathbb{Z}^{m}$ and $\left\{v_{1}, \cdots, v_{n}\right\}$ of $\mathbb{Z}^{n}$, such that $\alpha\left(w_{i}\right)=d_{i} v_{i}$ for $i=1, \cdots, r$ and $\alpha\left(w_{i}\right)=0$ for $i=r+1, \cdots, m$.

It follows that $F=\operatorname{Im} \alpha=\operatorname{span}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(\alpha\left(w_{1}\right), \cdots, \alpha\left(w_{m}\right)\right)=\operatorname{span}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(d_{1} v_{1}, \cdots, d_{r} v_{r}\right)$.
$\mathcal{B}^{\prime}=\left\{d_{1} v_{1}, \cdots, d_{r} v_{r}\right\}$ is a basis of $F$, since $\mathbb{Z}^{n}$ is torsion free. By Theorem 2.4.11, $\left\{v_{1}, \cdots, v_{r}\right\}$ is a basis of $\bar{F}$. So $\bar{F}=\mathbb{Z} v_{1} \oplus \cdots \oplus \mathbb{Z} v_{r}$ and $F=\mathbb{Z}\left(d_{1} v_{1}\right) \oplus \cdots \oplus \mathbb{Z}\left(d_{r} v_{r}\right)$. The claim follows from Lemma 2.3.7.

Now we quote Proposition 3 in [15]

Proposition 2.4.19. Let $v_{1}, v_{2}, \cdots, v_{r}$ be a $\mathbb{Z}$-basis of a module $M \subseteq \mathbb{Z}^{n}$ of index 1 . Then the matrix whose rows are $d_{1} v_{1}, d_{2} v_{2}, \cdots, d_{r} v_{r}$ has as a diagonal form the $r \times n$ diagonal matrix with entries $d_{1}, d_{2}, \cdots, d_{r}$ and in particular it has index $d_{1} d_{2} \cdots d_{r}$, if all $d_{i}$ are non-zero.

Proof. Let $\mathcal{D}=\left\{v_{1}, \ldots, v_{r}\right\}$ be a $\mathbb{Z}$-basis of $M$. Fixed $d_{1}, \ldots, d_{r} \in \mathbb{Z}$, we consider the linear map

$$
\varphi:\left\{\begin{array}{ccc}
M & \rightarrow & \mathbb{Z}^{n} \\
\sum_{i=1}^{r} h_{i} v_{i} & \rightarrow & \sum_{i=1}^{r} d_{i} h_{i} v_{i}
\end{array}\right.
$$

Since $M$ has index 1 , it is pure and we can extend $\mathcal{D}$ to a basis $C=\left\{v_{1}, \ldots, v_{r}, w_{r+1}, \ldots, w_{n}\right\}$ of $\mathbb{Z}^{n}$ (see Proposition 2.4.13). Thus $\operatorname{Im} \varphi=\operatorname{span}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(d_{1} v_{1}, \ldots, d_{r} v_{r}\right)$ and the matrix associated to $\varphi$ with respect to the bases $\mathcal{D}$ and $C$ is

$$
D^{T}=\left(\begin{array}{cccc}
d_{1} & 0 & \ldots & 0 \\
0 & d_{2} & \ldots & 0 \\
\ldots & \ldots & \ldots & \ldots \\
0 & 0 & \ldots & d_{r} \\
0 & 0 & \ldots & 0 \\
\ldots & \ldots & \ldots & \ldots \\
0 & 0 & \ldots & 0
\end{array}\right)
$$

Now we consider the canonical basis $\mathcal{E}=\left\{e_{1}, e_{2}, \cdots, e_{n}\right\}$ in $\mathbb{Z}^{n}$. With respect to the bases $\mathcal{D}$ and $\mathcal{E}$, the matrix associated to $\varphi$ is

$$
A^{T}=\left(\begin{array}{lllllll}
d_{1} v_{1} & \mid & d_{2} v_{2} & \mid & \ldots & \mid & d_{r} v_{r}
\end{array}\right)
$$

whose columns are $d_{i} v_{i}$ for any $i=1, \ldots, r$. We conclude that $D^{T}$ and $A^{T}$ are equivalent, that is $D^{T}$ is a diagonal form of $A^{T}$.

Now we suppose $d_{i} \neq 0$, for $i=1, \cdots, r$. Since $\operatorname{Im}(\varphi)=\operatorname{span}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(d_{1} v_{1}, \ldots, d_{r} v_{r}\right) \subseteq M$ and $M$ is pure in $\mathbb{Z}^{n}$ we get $\overline{\operatorname{Im} \varphi} \subseteq M$, by Definition 2.4.8. Thus $\operatorname{Im} \varphi \subseteq \overline{\operatorname{Im} \varphi} \subseteq M$. From $\operatorname{rank}(\operatorname{Im} \varphi)=\operatorname{rank}(M)$, we have $\operatorname{rank}(\overline{\operatorname{Im} \varphi})=\operatorname{rank}(M)$. By Lemma 2.4.14, we get $\overline{\operatorname{Im} \varphi}=M$.

Applying Lemma 2.3.7 to $\overline{\operatorname{Im} \varphi}=\mathbb{Z} v_{1} \oplus \cdots \oplus \mathbb{Z} v_{r}$ and $\operatorname{Im} \varphi=\mathbb{Z} d_{1} v_{1} \oplus \cdots \oplus \mathbb{Z} d_{r} v_{r}$, we
have that the module $\frac{\overline{\operatorname{Im\varphi }}}{\operatorname{Im} \varphi}$ is direct sum of cyclic modules of order $d_{i}$, that is

$$
\frac{\overline{\operatorname{Im} \varphi}}{\operatorname{Im} \varphi} \cong \frac{\mathbb{Z} v_{1}}{\mathbb{Z} d_{1} v_{1}} \times \cdots \times \frac{\mathbb{Z} v_{r}}{\mathbb{Z} d_{r} v_{r}}
$$

The claim follows considering the matrices $A$ and $D$ and observing that $\operatorname{Im} \varphi=\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}(A)$.

Example 2.4.20. If you take $M=\mathbb{Z}^{3}, v_{1}=(1,0,0), v_{2}=(1,1,0), v_{3}=(1,0,1)$ and $d_{1}=2$, $d_{2}=3, d_{3}=4$, then

$$
A=\left(\begin{array}{lll}
2 & 0 & 0 \\
3 & 3 & 0 \\
4 & 0 & 4
\end{array}\right)
$$

Applying the elementary column operations we get

$$
A \sim\left(\begin{array}{lll}
2 & 0 & 0 \\
3 & 3 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 4
\end{array}\right) \sim\left(\begin{array}{lll}
2 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 3 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 4
\end{array}\right)
$$

If we consider the map $\varphi$ defined in Proposition 2.4.19, then $\operatorname{Im} \varphi=\left\{2 v_{1}, 3 v_{2}, 4 v_{3}\right\}=$ $\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}(A)$ and $\overline{\operatorname{Im} \varphi}=\operatorname{span}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left\{v_{1}, v_{2}, v_{3}\right\}=\mathbb{Z}^{3}$. So

$$
\frac{\overline{\operatorname{Im} \varphi}}{\operatorname{Im} \varphi} \cong C_{2} \times C_{3} \times C_{4},
$$

where $C_{i}$ is the cyclic group of order $i$.

We conclude this chapter with the definition of Smith group of a linear map.
Definition 2.4.21. Given the free $\mathbb{Z}$-modules $M, N$ of finite rank and a linear map

$$
\varphi: N \rightarrow M
$$

Then the Smith group of $\varphi$ is defined as

$$
\frac{M}{\varphi(N)}
$$

### 2.4 Pure modules and index of submodules

We observe that in general $\frac{M}{\varphi(N)}=T \oplus V$, where $T$ is the torsion submodule and $V$ is a free submodule of finite rank (Corollary 2.3.9). If $M=\overline{\varphi(N)}$, then $\frac{M}{\varphi(N)}=T$.

## CHAPTER 3

## A diagonal form for incidence matrices of $t$-subsets vs

## $k$-subsets

In this chapter we deal with well-known results about a diagonal form for incidence matrices of $t$-subets vs $k$-subsets on a $n$-set $\Omega$. These matrices, introduced in Chapter 2 and denoted by $W_{t k}(n)$ have been studied by Wilson in [15] and Bier in [2].

### 3.1 A diagonal form for the incidence matrix $W_{t k}$ (Wilson's proof)

Here we give Wilson's original proof. He uses the notion of index introduced in section 2.4: the index of an integral matrix $M$ is the index of the $\mathbb{Z}$-module generated by the rows of $M$, called $\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}(M)$, as a subgroup of the module $Z(M)$ of all integral vectors which belong to $r^{o} w_{\mathbb{Q}}(M)$, the vector space generated by the rows of $M$.

We will construct a matrix $M_{t k}(n)$ using the matrices $W_{i k}(n)$, for $i=0, \cdots, t$; in Propo-
sition 3.1.3 we will prove that $M_{t k}(n)$ has index 1, that is $Z\left(M_{t k}(n)\right)=\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(M_{t k}(n)\right)$ and that $W_{t k}(n)$ and $M_{t k}(n)$ have the same rank. Thus, in order to give a diagonal form of $W_{t k}(n)$, (see Theorem 3.1.6), it will be enough to find appropriate bases of $r o w_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(M_{t k}(n)\right)$ and $r o w_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(W_{t k}(n)\right)$ (see Propositions 3.1.4 and 3.1.5).

We begin with some notation. Given the $n_{i} \times m$ matrices $A_{i}$ with $i=0, \cdots, t$, we denote by

the $n_{0}+n_{1}+\cdots+n_{t} \times m$ matrix obtained by stacking the matrices $A_{0}, A_{1}, \cdots, A_{t}$ one on top of the other, that is

$$
A=\left(\begin{array}{c}
A_{0} \\
A_{1} \\
\vdots \\
A_{t}
\end{array}\right) .
$$

For $0 \leq t \leq k \leq n$ we define

$$
M_{t k}(n)=\bigcup_{i=0}^{t} W_{i k}(n)=\left(\begin{array}{c}
W_{0 k}(n) \\
W_{1 k}(n) \\
\vdots \\
W_{t k}(n)
\end{array}\right) .
$$

Example 3.1.1. Taken $n=3, t=1$ and $k=2$, the matrix $M_{12}(3)$, whose rows are

### 3.1 A diagonal form for the incidence matrix $W_{t k}$ <br> (Wilson's proof)

indexed by $\emptyset,\{1\},\{2\},\{3\}$ and columns are indexed by $\{1,2\},\{1,3\},\{2,3\}$, is

$$
\left(\begin{array}{lll}
1 & 1 & 1 \\
1 & 1 & 0 \\
1 & 0 & 1 \\
0 & 1 & 1
\end{array}\right) .
$$

In the sequel, if there is not confusion, we write $W_{t k}$ instead $W_{t k}(n)$ and $M_{t k}$ instead $M_{t k}(n)$. The following Lemma will be of fundamental importance

Lemma 3.1.2. For $0 \leq j \leq t \leq k \leq n$

$$
\begin{equation*}
W_{j t} W_{t k}=\binom{k-j}{t-j} W_{j k} . \tag{3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. The proof follows immediatly from the relation

$$
W_{j t} W_{t k}(S, K)=\sum_{T} W_{j t}(S, T) W_{t k}(T, K),
$$

for an $j$-subset $S$ and a $k$-subset $K$ and where the sum is extended over all $t$-subsets $T$ of $\Omega$. We have the claim observing that the number of $t$-subsets $T$ such that $S \subseteq T \subseteq K$ is $\binom{k-j}{t-j}$ if $S \subseteq K$, and 0 otherwise.

Now, we observe that the Equation 3.1 shows that $\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Q}}\left(W_{j k}\right) \subseteq \operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Q}}\left(W_{t k}\right)$ for $j \leq t$ and hence $\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Q}}\left(M_{t k}\right)=\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Q}}\left(W_{t k}\right)$. In particular, $M_{t k}$ has rank at most $\binom{n}{t}$ (i.e. the number of rows of $W_{t k}$ ).

More precisely, we get:

Proposition 3.1.3. For non-negative integers $t, k, n$ with $0 \leq t \leq k \leq n-t$, the matrix $M_{t k}$ has rank $\binom{n}{t}$ and index 1.

Proof. We consider separately two cases:

1. $0 \leq t \leq k \leq n$ and $k=n-t$,
2. $0 \leq t \leq k \leq n$ and $k<n-t$.

Case 1. We claim that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{i=0}^{t}(-1)^{i} \bar{W}_{i k}^{T} W_{i k}=I_{\binom{n}{k}} \tag{3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $I_{\binom{n}{k}}$ is the identity matrix of order $\binom{n}{k}$ and $\bar{W}_{i k}$ is the $\binom{n}{i} \times\binom{ n}{k}$ matrix defined by

$$
\bar{W}_{i k}(S, K)= \begin{cases}1 & \text { if } S \cap K=\emptyset  \tag{3.3}\\ 0 & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

for a $i$-subset $S$ and a $k$-subset $K$. To prove this just note that the entry in row $A$ and column $B$ on the left-hand side of 3.2 is

$$
\sum_{i=0}^{t}(-1)^{i}\binom{|B|-|A \cap B|}{i}= \begin{cases}0 & \text { if } A \neq B  \tag{3.4}\\ 1 & \text { if } A=B\end{cases}
$$

Indeed, for an $i$ fixed, $\bar{W}_{i k}^{T} W_{i k}(A, B)$ is the number of all $i$-subsets $S$ of $\Omega$ such that $S \cap A=\emptyset$ and $S \subseteq B$, that is $(\underset{i}{(B|-|A \cap B|})$. If $A=B$ it is clear that the left-hand side of equation (3.4) is 1 . If $A \neq B$, then $|A \cap B| \geq n-2 t$, as both $A$ and $B$ have cardinality $n-t$ (the bound is achieved when $A$ contains the complement of $B$ ), hence $t \geq n-t-|A \cap B|=|B|-|A \cap B|$. Put $q=|B|-|A \cap B|$; we get

$$
\sum_{i=0}^{t}(-1)^{i}\binom{|B|-|A \cap B|}{i}=\sum_{i=0}^{q}(-1)^{i}\binom{q}{i}=(-1+1)^{q} .
$$

So 3.2 can be written as

$$
\bar{M}_{t k}^{T} M_{t k}=I_{\binom{n}{t}}
$$

### 3.1 A diagonal form for the incidence matrix $W_{t k}$

(Wilson's proof)
where

$$
\bar{M}_{t k}=\bigcup_{i=0}^{t}(-1)^{i} \bar{W}_{i k} .
$$

The matrix $A=\bar{M}_{t k}^{T}$ is an integral matrix such that $A M_{t k}=I_{\binom{n}{t}}$. We deduce that $\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(I_{\binom{n}{t}}\right) \subseteq \operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(M_{t k}\right)$; so $\binom{n}{t}=\operatorname{rank}\left(I_{\binom{n}{t}}\right) \leq \operatorname{rank}\left(M_{t k}\right)$ and $\operatorname{rank}\left(M_{t k}\right)=\binom{n}{t}$.

About the index, we observe that $M_{t k} A M_{t k}=M_{t k}$, so that by Proposition 2.4.16, $M_{t k}$ has index 1 .

Case 2. We assume $k<n-t$ and we prove the statement by induction on $n+t+k$. If $t=0$ then the claim follows observing that

$$
M_{0 k}=W_{0 k}=(1 \cdots 1) .
$$

Now we suppose $0<t \leq k<n-t$. Given $1 \leq j \leq t$, choose a point $x_{0}$ in the $n$-set $\Omega$. Then the rows ( $j$-subsets) and columns ( $k$-subsets) of $W_{j k}(n)$ are partitioned according to whether or not they contain $x_{0}$. This gives us a block decomposition of $W_{j k}(n)$ :

$$
W_{j k}(n)=\left(\begin{array}{c|c}
W_{j-1, k-1}(n-1) & 0 \\
\hline W_{j, k-1}(n-1) & W_{j k}(n-1)
\end{array}\right) .
$$

After permuting rows, we find that $M_{t k}(n)$ is equivalent to

$$
\left(\begin{array}{c|c}
M_{t-1, k-1}(n-1) & 0 \\
\hline M_{t, k-1}(n-1) & M_{t k}(n-1)
\end{array}\right)
$$

By the induction hypothesis applied to $M_{t-1, k-1}(n-1)$ and $M_{t k}(n-1)$, we can use elementary integral row and column operations to reduce the above matrix to

$$
\left(\begin{array}{cc|cc}
I_{1} & 0 & 0 & 0  \tag{3.5}\\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
\hline * & * & I_{2} & 0 \\
* & * & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right)
$$

where $I_{1}$ and $I_{2}$ are identity matrices of orders $\binom{n-1}{t-1}$ and $\binom{n-1}{t}$, respectively. Then $\operatorname{rank}\left(M_{t k}(n)\right) \geq\binom{ n-1}{t-1}+\binom{n-1}{t}=\binom{n}{t}$, hence $\operatorname{rank}\left(M_{t k}(n)\right)=\binom{n}{t}$.

Further row operations on the matrix in 3.5 can be used to create an identity of order $\binom{n}{t}$ as a submatrix of some $M \sim M_{t k}(n)$.

Since $\binom{n}{t}$ is the rank of $M_{t k}(n)$, all other entries of $M$ must be zeros. We deduce that $M_{t k}(n)$ is equivalent to a diagonal matrix with 1's entries, so its index is 1.

The argument in Lemma 3.1.3 shows that $Z\left(M_{t k}(n)\right)=\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(M_{t k}(n)\right)$, of rank $\binom{n}{t}$. As $\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(W_{t k}\right) \subseteq \operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(M_{t k}(n)\right)$ and $\operatorname{rank}\left(\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(M_{t k}(n)\right)\right)=\operatorname{rank}\left(\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(W_{t k}\right)\right)$, by 2.4.14 we have that $Z\left(W_{t k}\right)=Z\left(M_{t k}(n)\right)$.

As said above, we want to find an appropriate basis of $Z\left(M_{t k}(n)\right)$ and, consequently, a basis of $\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(W_{t k}\right)$ such that it is easy to determine the module $\frac{Z\left(M_{t k}(n)\right)}{\operatorname{row}_{z}\left(W_{t k}\right)}$.

Proposition 3.1.4. Let $k \leq n$ and $l=\min \{k, n-k\}$. There exist integral matrices $E_{0 k}, E_{1, k}, \ldots, E_{l, k}$ such that $E_{i k}$ is a $\left.\binom{n}{i}-\binom{n}{i-1}\right) \times\binom{ n}{k}$ matrix, the rows of which are in $r o w_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(W_{i k}\right)$ and such that for each $t \leq l$, the rows of $E_{0 k} \cup \ldots \cup E_{t k}$ form a $\mathbb{Z}$-basis for $\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(M_{t k}\right)$.

Proof. Let $E_{0 k}=W_{0 k}$. By induction on $i$, we suppose $E_{0 k} \cup E_{1, k} \cup \cdots \cup E_{i, k}$ basis of $\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(M_{i k}\right)$, with $i<l$. By Proposition 2.4.13 we extend the $\mathbb{Z}$-basis $E_{0 k} \cup \ldots \cup E_{i k}$ of $\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(M_{i k}\right)$, which has index 1 by Proposition 3.1.3, to a $\mathbb{Z}$-basis of $\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(M_{i+1, k}\right)=$ $\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(M_{i k}\right)+\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(W_{i+1, k}\right)$, by adding $\binom{n}{i+1}-\binom{n}{i}$ vectors from $r^{\circ} w_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(W_{i+1, k}\right)$. By recursion we obtain the claim.

Proposition 3.1.5. Let $E_{0 k}, E_{1, k}, \ldots, E_{l, k}$ be as in Proposition 3.1.4. Then, for $t \leq l, a$

### 3.1 A diagonal form for the incidence matrix $W_{t k}$ <br> (Wilson's proof)

$\mathbb{Z}$-basis for $\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(W_{t k}\right)$ is provided by the rows of

$$
\begin{equation*}
\binom{k}{t} E_{0 k} \cup\binom{k-1}{t-1} E_{1 k} \cup\binom{k-2}{t-2} E_{2 k} \cup \ldots \cup E_{t k} . \tag{3.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. The proof is by induction on $k$. The case $k=0$ is trivial. Fix $k>0$. There is nothing to prove if $t=k$, because $W_{k k}=I$ and $\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(W_{k k}\right)=\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(M_{k k}\right)$, (in general $\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(W_{t k}\right) \subseteq \operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(M_{t k}\right)$ ). The assertion reduces to Proposition 3.1.4. So we assume $t<k$. The equation 3.1 shows that the rows of $\binom{k-i}{t-i} W_{i k}$ are contained in $\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(W_{t k}\right)$. The matrix $E=\bigcup_{i=0}^{t} E_{i k}$ has index 1, because its rows form a $\mathbb{Z}$-basis for $\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(M_{t k}\right)=Z\left(M_{t k}\right)$, so $\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}(E)=\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(M_{t k}\right)=Z\left(M_{t k}\right)=Z(E)$.

By Proposition 2.4.19 the rows of $\bigcup_{i=0}^{t}\binom{k-i}{t-i} E_{i k}$ span a submodule $\mathcal{M}$ of $r o w_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(M_{t k}\right)$ of rank $\binom{n}{t}$ and index

$$
\begin{equation*}
N=\prod_{i=0}^{t}\binom{k-i}{t-i}^{\binom{n}{i}-\binom{n}{i-1}} . \tag{3.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

In particular we observe that $\mathcal{M} \subseteq \operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(W_{t k}\right)$, by Lemma 3.1.2. We will show that $\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(W_{t k}\right)$ has index N , defined by 3.7.

We have $2 t \leq n$. Let $E_{0 t}, E_{1 t}, \ldots, E_{t t}$ be the $\left.\binom{n}{i}-\binom{n}{i-1}\right) \times\binom{ n}{t}$ matrices as in Proposition 3.1.4. Define integral matrices $A_{i t k}$ for $0 \leq i \leq t$ by

$$
\begin{equation*}
E_{i t} W_{t k}=\binom{k-i}{t-i} A_{i t k} . \tag{3.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

In the following we prove that

$$
A=\bigcup_{i=0}^{t} A_{i t k}
$$

forms a $\mathbb{Z}$-basis for $\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(M_{t k}(n)\right)$ and

$$
\bigcup_{i=0}^{t}\binom{k-i}{t-i} A_{i t k}
$$

forms a $\mathbb{Z}$-basis for $r w_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(W_{t k}\right)$.

Given that the rows of $E_{i t}$ are linear combinations of the rows of $W_{i t}$, we have that the rows of $E_{i t} W_{t k}$ are linear combination of the rows of $W_{i t} W_{t k}$ and by equation 3.1, each $A_{i t k}$ is a matrix $\left.\binom{n}{i}-\binom{n}{i-1}\right) \times\binom{ n}{k}$, whose rows are linear combinations of the rows of $W_{i k}$.
$W_{t t}=I$, so $r o w_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(M_{t t}\right)$ consists of all integral vectors of lenght $\binom{n}{t}$. Moreover the union of the rows of $E_{0 t}, E_{1 t}, \ldots, E_{t t}$ forms a $\mathbb{Z}$-basis of $\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(M_{t t}\right)$. It follows that the rows of

$$
\bigcup_{i=0}^{t}\binom{k-i}{t-i} A_{i t k}
$$

form a $\mathbb{Z}$-basis of $r o w_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(W_{t k}\right)$. They span $r o w_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(W_{t k}\right)$ because taken $w \in \operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(W_{t k}\right)$, this vector is a linear combination of the rows of $W_{t k}$,

$$
w=h_{1} w_{1}+\ldots+h_{s} w_{s}=\left(h_{1}, \ldots, h_{s}\right)\left(\begin{array}{c}
w_{1} \\
w_{2} \\
\ldots \\
w_{s}
\end{array}\right)
$$

where $s=\binom{n}{t}$ and $w_{1}, \ldots, w_{s}$ are the rows of $W_{t k}$.
Since $\left(h_{1}, \ldots, h_{s}\right)$ is a vector of lenght $\binom{n}{t}$, it is a linear combination of $\bigcup_{i=0}^{t} E_{i t}$. So the product $\left(h_{1}, \ldots, h_{s}\right)\left(\begin{array}{c}w_{1} \\ w_{2} \\ \ldots \\ w_{s}\end{array}\right)$ is a linear combination of $\bigcup_{i=0}^{t} E_{i t} W_{t k}=\bigcup_{i=0}^{t}\binom{k-i}{t-i} A_{i t k}$.

Our aim is to prove that the rows of

$$
A=\bigcup_{i=0}^{t} A_{i t k}
$$

form a $\mathbb{Z}$-basis for $r o w_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(M_{t k}\right)$, which has index 1. Applying the Proposition 2.4.19 we conclude that $\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(W_{t k}\right)$ has index $N$.

### 3.1 A diagonal form for the incidence matrix $W_{t k}$ <br> (Wilson's proof)

For this purpose we observe that the rows of $A$ are contained in $r o w_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(M_{t k}\right)$, because they are integral vectors, rational linear combination of the rows of $W_{t k}$ and $M_{t k}$ has index 1. Now by our induction hypothesis, $\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(W_{j t}\right)$ has $\mathbb{Z}$-basis consisting of the rows of

$$
\bigcup_{i=0}^{j}\binom{t-i}{j-i} E_{i t} .
$$

By equation 3.8 and since $\binom{k-j}{t-j} W_{j k}=W_{j t} W_{t k}$, the rows of $\binom{k-j}{t-j} W_{j k}$ are integral linear combinations of the rows of

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(\bigcup_{i=0}^{j}\binom{t-i}{j-i} E_{i t}\right) W_{t k} & =\bigcup_{i=0}^{j}\binom{t-i}{j-i}\left(E_{i t} W_{t k}\right)=\bigcup_{i=0}^{j}\binom{t-i}{j-i}\binom{k-i}{t-i} A_{i t k}= \\
& =\binom{k-j}{t-j}\left(\bigcup_{i=0}^{j}\binom{k-i}{j-i} A_{i t k}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

It follows that the rows of $W_{j k}$ are integral linear combinations of the rows of

$$
\bigcup_{i=0}^{j}\binom{k-i}{j-i} A_{i t k}
$$

and these are integral linear combinations of the rows of $A$. This prove that $r o w_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(W_{j k}\right) \subseteq$ $\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}(A)$ and completes the proof.

Theorem 3.1.6. Let $t \leq k \leq n-k$. Then $W_{t k}$ has as a diagonal form the $\binom{n}{t} \times\binom{ n}{k}$ matrix with diagonal entries

$$
\binom{k-i}{t-i} \text { with multiplicity }\binom{n}{i}-\binom{n}{i-1}, \quad i=0,1, \ldots, t
$$

Proof. The propositions 3.1.4 and 3.1.5 assert the existence of an integral matrix $E$, of size $\binom{n}{t} \times\binom{ n}{k}$, such that the rows of which form a $\mathbb{Z}$-basis for an index 1 module $\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(M_{t k}\right)$ and, called $B$ the diagonal matrix with $\binom{n}{i}-\binom{n}{i-1}$ occurrences of $\binom{k-i}{t-i}$ on the diagonal, the rows of $B E$ form a $\mathbb{Z}$-basis for $\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(W_{t k}\right)$. Then the rows of $W_{t k}$ are integral linear combinations of the rows of $B E$. This means that we can obtain $W_{t k}$ from $B E$ with row elementary operations and so $W_{t k} \sim B E$. By Proposition 2.4.19 the matrix $B E$ has as a diagonal form the matrix $B$.

For simplicity, in the sequel we refer to the Theorem 3.1.6 as Wilson's Theorem.

## CHAPTER 4

## A diagonal form for the incidence matrix $W_{t k}$ via linear algebra

Here we give a new proof of Wilson's Theorem seen in the previous chapter. Many of the ideas of sections 4.1 and 4.2 are based upon [4], [13] and [14]. In section 4.3 we will determine a particular basis for $\mathbb{Q} L_{t}^{n}$ related to $\operatorname{Sym}(n)$-irreducible representations. Our reference is [10].

### 4.1 The Boolean lattice

We begin this chapter with a short introduction to the Boolean lattice, essential for the use we will make later. In the following $R$ is one of $\mathbb{Q}$ or $\mathbb{R} ; \Omega$ is the finite set $\{1,2, \cdots, n\}$; $L^{n}$ is the power set of $\Omega$ and $R L^{n}$ is the vector space of formal sums of elements of $L^{n}$ with coefficients in $R$, i.e.

$$
R L^{n}=\left\{\sum_{x \in L^{n}} r_{x} x: x \in L^{n}, r_{x} \in R\right\} .
$$

Of course $R L^{n}$ has dimension $2^{n}$.

We give to $R L^{n}$ the structure of algebra by adding a multiplication operation. For $x, y \in L^{n}$ we define a product in the following way:

$$
\begin{equation*}
x \cdot y=x \cup y \tag{4.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

and extend this linearly to $R L^{n}$. If $f=\sum_{x \in L^{n}} f_{x} x$ and $h=\sum_{y \in L^{n}} f_{y} y$, we put

$$
f \cdot h=\sum_{x, y \in L^{n}} f_{x} h_{y} x \cdot y
$$

This means that a $i$-set is a product of its $i$ elements, so we can write $\alpha_{1} \cdots \alpha_{i}$ instead of $\left\{\alpha_{1}, \cdots, \alpha_{i}\right\}$. Note that the union of sets induces an associative product on $R L^{n}$.

Definition 4.1.1. We call $f=\sum f_{x} x$ and $h=\sum f_{y} y$ disjoint from each other provided that for all $x, y \in L^{n}$, with $x \cap y \neq \emptyset$, we have $f_{x}=0$ or $h_{y}=0$.

On $R L^{n}$ we define the standard inner product $\langle;\rangle$ by setting

$$
\langle x ; y\rangle=1 \text { if } x=y \text { and }\langle x ; y\rangle=0 \text { otherwise, }
$$

for all $x, y \in L^{n}$. We extend this into $R L^{n}$ linearly in both arguments. Note that this product is positive-definite and bilinear by construction. It also transforms the basis $L^{n}$ of $R L^{n}$ into an orthonormal basis. So if

$$
f=\sum_{y \in L^{n}} f_{y} y \in R L^{n},
$$

with $f_{y} \in R$, we get

$$
\langle f ; x\rangle=\left\langle\sum_{y \in L^{n}} f_{y} y ; x\right\rangle=\sum_{y \in L^{n}} f_{y}\langle y ; x\rangle=f_{x}\langle x ; x\rangle=f_{x} .
$$

With an inner product we get a natural norm on $R L^{n}$, defined to be

$$
\|f\|^{2}=\langle f ; f\rangle .
$$

As we said, $L^{n}$ is an orthonormal basis of $R L^{n}$ since for any $x \in L^{n}$ we have

$$
\|x\|=\sqrt{\langle x ; x\rangle}=1 .
$$

Example 4.1.2. If $f=-3\{1,2\}+\{1,3,5\}$ and $h=4\{1,3\}+\{1,2,4\}$, then

$$
f \cdot h=-12\{1,2,3\}-3\{1,2,4\}+4\{1,3,5\}+\{1,2,3,4,5\}
$$

and

$$
\langle f ;\{1,2\}\rangle=-3 .
$$

Now we encode the partial order $\subseteq$ of the Boolean lattice ( $L^{n}, \subseteq$ ) into the algebra $R L^{n}$ in an algebraic way. To this end we introduce the maps $\epsilon^{(n)}: R L^{n} \rightarrow R L^{n}$ and $\partial^{(n)}: R L^{n} \rightarrow R L^{n}$ defined on basis elements $x, y \in L^{n}$ by

$$
\epsilon^{(n)}(x)=\left\{\begin{array}{ll}
\sum_{\substack{y \geq x}} y & \text { if }|x|<n \\
|y||=x|+1 \\
0 & \text { otherwise }
\end{array} \quad \text { and } \quad \partial^{(n)}(y)= \begin{cases}\sum_{\substack{x \leq y}} x & \text { if }|y|>0 \\
|x|=y \mid-1 \\
0 & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}\right.
$$

and extended linearly. This means that $\left\langle\epsilon^{(n)}(x) ; y\right\rangle=1$ if and only if $|y|=|x|+1$ and $y \supseteq x$. Moreover, $\left\langle x ; \partial^{(n)}(y)\right\rangle=1$ if and only if $|x|=|y|-1$ and $x \subseteq y$.

We observe that $\epsilon^{(n)}(\Omega)=0$ since $\Omega$ is the maximal element of $L^{n}$. The same is true for $\partial^{(n)}(\emptyset)$.

Proposition 4.1.3. If $f_{1}, f_{2} \in R L^{n}$ then $\left\langle\epsilon^{(n)}\left(f_{1}\right) ; f_{2}\right\rangle=\left\langle f_{1} ; \partial^{(n)}\left(f_{2}\right)\right\rangle$. In particular $\epsilon^{(n)}$ and $\partial^{(n)}$ are adjoints of each other.

Proof. Since $\langle;\rangle$ is linear in the first and second variables, it is enough to prove this for $x, y \in L^{n}$. Note that

$$
\left\langle\epsilon^{(n)}(x) ; y\right\rangle=\left\{\begin{array}{ll}
1 & \text { if }|y|=|x|+1 \text { and } x \subseteq y \\
0 & \text { otherwise }
\end{array} .\right.
$$

However, this is the same when we look at $\partial^{(n)}$ :

$$
\left\langle x ; \partial^{(n)}(y)\right\rangle=\left\{\begin{array}{ll}
1 & \text { if }|x|=|y|-1 \text { and } x \subseteq y \\
0 & \text { otherwise }
\end{array} .\right.
$$

As we know, $L^{n}=\cup_{i=0}^{n} L_{i}^{n}$. The space $R L^{n}$ splits naturally into a direct sum

$$
R L^{n}=R L_{0}^{n} \oplus R L_{1}^{n} \oplus \cdots \oplus R L_{n}^{n}
$$

where $R L_{i}^{n}$ is the subspace with basis the $i$-sets of $L^{n}$.
We can restrict $\epsilon^{(n)}$ and $\partial^{(n)}$-maps:

$$
\epsilon_{t}^{(n) t+1}: R L_{t}^{n} \rightarrow R L_{t+1}^{n} \quad \partial_{t+1}^{(n) t}: R L_{t+1}^{n} \rightarrow R L_{t}^{n}
$$

In the following, unless necessary, we write $\epsilon, \partial, \epsilon_{t}^{t+1}$ and $\partial_{t+1}^{t}$ instead $\epsilon^{(n)}, \partial^{(n)}, \epsilon_{t}^{(n) t+1}$ and $\partial_{t+1}^{(n) t}$.

Note that if we compose $\epsilon_{t}^{t+1}$ with $\partial_{t+1}^{t}$ we obtain a vector space endomorphism of $R L_{t}^{n}$, denoted by

$$
v_{t}^{+}:=\partial_{t+1}^{t} \epsilon_{t}^{t+1}
$$

$v_{t}^{+}$is non-zero only if $0 \leq t \leq n-1$. Observe that $v_{t}^{+}$is the restriction of the linear map $\nu^{+}=\partial \epsilon$ to $R L_{t}^{n}$. Similarly, we define the restriction

$$
v_{t}^{-}:=\epsilon_{t-1}^{t} \partial_{t}^{t-1}
$$

of $v^{-}=\epsilon \partial$. This is non-zero only if $1 \leq t \leq n$.

By Proposition 4.1.3 we know that $\epsilon$ and $\partial$ are adjoints of each other and so

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\langle v^{+}\left(f_{1}\right) ; f_{2}\right\rangle=\left\langle\epsilon\left(f_{1}\right) ; \epsilon\left(f_{2}\right)\right\rangle=\left\langle f_{1} ; v^{+}\left(f_{2}\right)\right\rangle . \tag{4.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Hence $v^{+}$is symmetric. Similarly for $v^{-}$.

A basic property of the maps $v^{+}$and $v^{-}$is given by next Lemma.

Lemma 4.1.4. Let $0 \leq t \leq n$ and let id $_{t}$ be the identity map on $R L_{t}^{n}$. Then

$$
v_{t}^{+}-v_{t}^{-}=(n-2 t) i d_{t} .
$$

Proof. The statement is true for $t=0$. We assume $t \neq 0$. Since $v_{t}^{+}$and $v_{t}^{-}$are linear it is enough to prove this for basis elements.

Since $\epsilon_{t}^{t+1}$ and $\partial_{t+1}^{t}$ are adjoints of each other, for any $x, y \in L_{t}^{n}$, we have that

$$
\left\langle v_{t}^{+}(x) ; y\right\rangle=\left\langle\partial_{t+1}^{t} \epsilon_{t}^{t+1}(x) ; y\right\rangle=\left\langle\epsilon_{t}^{t+1}(x) ; \epsilon_{t}^{t+1}(y)\right\rangle
$$

is the number of $z \in L_{t+1}^{n}$ containing both $x$ and $y$. Thus

$$
\left\langle v_{t}^{+}(x) ; y\right\rangle=\left\{\begin{array}{ccc}
n-t & \text { if } & x=y \\
1 & \text { if } & x \cap y \in L_{t-1}^{n} \\
0 & & \text { otherwise }
\end{array} .\right.
$$

Similarly, $\left\langle v_{t}^{-}(x) ; y\right\rangle=\left\langle\epsilon_{t-1}^{t} \partial_{t}^{t-1}(x) ; y\right\rangle=\left\langle\partial_{t}^{t-1}(x) ; \partial_{t}^{t-1}(y)\right\rangle$ is the number of all $z \in L_{t-1}^{n}$ contained in both $x$ and $y$. Thus

$$
\left\langle v_{t}^{-}(x) ; y\right\rangle=\left\{\begin{array}{ccc}
t & \text { if } & x=y \\
1 & \text { if } & x \cap y \in L_{t-1}^{n} \\
0 & & \text { otherwise }
\end{array} .\right.
$$

We get

$$
\left\langle\left(v_{t}^{+}-v_{t}^{-}\right)(x) ; y\right\rangle=\left\{\begin{array}{ccc}
n-2 t & \text { if } & x=y \\
0 & & \text { otherwise }
\end{array} .\right.
$$

The claim follows remembering that

$$
\left(v_{t}^{+}-v_{t}^{-}\right)(x)=\sum_{y \in L_{t}^{n}}\left\langle\left(v_{t}^{+}-v_{t}^{-}\right)(x) ; y\right\rangle y .
$$

We conclude this section with some notion about the action of $\operatorname{Sym}(n)$ on $R L^{n}$.
The natural action of $\operatorname{Sym}(n)$ on $\Omega$ induces an action on $L_{i}^{n}$ : for $g \in \operatorname{Sym}(n)$ and $x=\left\{\alpha_{1}, \cdots, \alpha_{i}\right\} \in L_{i}^{n}$ we have

$$
\left\{\alpha_{1}, \cdots, \alpha_{i}\right\}^{g}=\left\{\alpha_{1}^{g}, \cdots, \alpha_{i}^{g}\right\} .
$$

$R L_{i}^{n}$ becomes a $R \operatorname{Sym}(n)$-space, if we think to $L_{i}^{n}$ as a basis of $R L_{i}^{n}$.

Moreover it is easy to prove the following Lemmas
Lemma 4.1.5. If $f_{1}, f_{2} \in R L^{n}$ and $g \in \operatorname{Sym}(n)$ then $\left\langle f_{1} ; f_{2}\right\rangle=\left\langle f_{1}^{g} ; f_{2}^{g}\right\rangle$.
Lemma 4.1.6. Let $f_{1}, f_{2} \in R L^{n}$ and $g \in \operatorname{Sym}(n)$ then $\left(f_{1} \cdot f_{2}\right)^{g}=f_{1}^{g} \cdot f_{2}^{g}$.

It follows that the action of $\operatorname{Sym}(n)$ on $R L^{n}$ commutes with the maps $\epsilon$ and $\partial$ we have introduced.

Lemma 4.1.7. The action of $\operatorname{Sym}(n)$ on $R L^{n}$ commutes with the $\epsilon$ and $\partial$-functions. In particular, for $f \in R L^{n}$ we have

$$
\epsilon(f)^{g}=\epsilon\left(f^{g}\right) \quad \text { and } \quad \partial(f)^{g}=\partial\left(f^{g}\right)
$$

Proof. Since $\epsilon$ and $\partial$ are linear, it is enough to show the equality for basis elements. So let $x \in L_{t}^{n}$, then

$$
\epsilon_{t}^{t+1}(x)^{g}=\left(\sum_{y \in L_{t+1}^{n}}\left\langle\epsilon_{t}^{t+1}(x) ; y\right\rangle y\right)^{g}=\sum_{y \in L_{t+1}^{n}}\left\langle\epsilon_{t}^{t+1}(x) ; y\right\rangle y^{g}
$$

and

$$
\epsilon_{t}^{t+1}\left(x^{g}\right)=\sum_{y \in L_{t+1}^{n}}\left\langle\epsilon_{t}^{t+1}\left(x^{g}\right) ; y\right\rangle y .
$$

For $z \in L_{t+1}^{n},\left\langle\epsilon_{t}^{t+1}(x) ; z\right\rangle=1$ if and only if $\left\langle\epsilon_{t}^{t+1}\left(x^{g}\right) ; z^{g}\right\rangle=1$, since $x \subseteq z$ implies $x^{g} \subseteq z^{g}$ and conversely. So, in the first equation $z^{g}$ has coefficient 1 if and only if the coefficient of $z^{g}$ in the second equation is 1 . This argument works in reverse, proving equality. Similarly we prove $\partial(f)^{g}=\partial\left(f^{g}\right)$.

Lemma 4.1.7 tells us that the $\operatorname{Sym}(n)$-action also commutes with

$$
v^{+}=\partial \epsilon \text { and } v^{-}=\epsilon \partial
$$

### 4.2 Eigenspace decomposition

Our aim is to split $R L_{t}^{n}$ into a direct sum of irreducible $\operatorname{Sym}(n)$-invariant spaces. We will do this using the symmetric map $v_{t}^{+}$. Next Lemma allows us to relate eigenspaces and eigenvalues of $v_{t}^{+}$and $v_{t}^{-}$to each other.

Lemma 4.2.1. Let $A$ and $B$ be vector spaces and let $\alpha: A \rightarrow B$ and $\beta: B \rightarrow A$ be linear maps. Then $\beta \alpha: A \rightarrow A$ and $\alpha \beta: B \rightarrow B$ have the same non-zero eigenvalues. Furthermore, if $\lambda$ is a non-zero eigenvalue with eigenspaces $A_{\lambda} \subseteq A$ and $B_{\lambda} \subseteq B$ for $\beta \alpha$ and $\alpha \beta$ respectively, then $\alpha$ and $\beta$ restrict to isomorphisms $\alpha: A_{\lambda} \rightarrow B_{\lambda}$ and $\beta: B_{\lambda} \rightarrow A_{\lambda}$.

Proof. In order to prove that $\beta \alpha$ and $\alpha \beta$ have the same non-zero eigenvalues, we consider an eigenvalue $\lambda \neq 0$ of $\alpha \beta$. Then we have some $w \in B$ such that $\alpha \beta(w)=\lambda w$. Applying $\beta$ to both sides, we get

$$
\beta \alpha(\beta(w))=\lambda(\beta(w),
$$

so $\lambda$ is also an eigenvalue of $\beta \alpha$. Now we consider the map $\alpha: A_{\lambda} \rightarrow B_{\lambda}$ and suppose that $\alpha(v)=\alpha(w)$ for $v, w \in A_{\lambda}$. Applying $\beta$ we have $\beta \alpha(v)=\beta \alpha(w)$, whence $\lambda v=\lambda w$. It follows that $\alpha$ is injective from $A_{\lambda}$ to $B_{\lambda}$. Now we prove that it is surjective. For this purpose, let $w \in B_{\lambda}$, so $\frac{1}{\lambda} \beta(w) \in A_{\lambda}$ and $\alpha\left(\frac{1}{\lambda} \beta(w)\right)=w$. The claim follows. A similar argument shows that $\beta$ is an isomorphism from $B_{\lambda}$ to $A_{\lambda}$.

In particular we may take $A=R L_{t}^{n}, B=R L_{t+1}^{n}, \alpha=\epsilon_{t}^{t+1}$ and $\beta=\partial_{t+1}^{t}$. Above Lemma implies that $\epsilon_{t}^{t+1}$ and $\partial_{t+1}^{t}$ restrict to isomorphisms between non-zero eigenspaces of $v_{t}^{+}$ and $v_{t+1}^{-}$, and any eigenvector for $v_{t+1}^{-}$with eigenvalue $\lambda \neq 0$ is also an eigenvector for $v_{t+1}^{+}$with eigenvalue $\lambda+n-2 t-2$, by Lemma 4.1.4.

In the following Theorem using Lemma 4.1.4 we get the eigenvalues $v_{t}^{+}$and $v_{t}^{-}$.
Theorem 4.2.2. Suppose that $2 t \leq n$. Then $v_{t}^{-}$has $t+1$ eigenvalues

$$
\lambda_{t-1,0}>\lambda_{t-1,1}>\cdots>\lambda_{t-1, t-1}>\lambda_{t-1, t}=0
$$

and $v_{t}^{+}$has $t+1$ eigenvalues

$$
\lambda_{t, 0}>\lambda_{t, 1}>\cdots>\lambda_{t, t-1}>\lambda_{t, t} \geq 0,
$$

with multiplicity $n_{i}=\binom{n}{i}-\binom{n}{i-1}$, for $0 \leq i \leq t$. In particular we have the decomposition

$$
\begin{equation*}
R L_{t}^{n}=E_{t, 0}^{n} \oplus E_{t, 1}^{n} \oplus \cdots \oplus E_{t, t}^{n} \tag{4.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $E_{t, i}^{n}$ is the $v_{t}^{+}$-eigenspace with eigenvalue $\lambda_{t, i}$ and $\operatorname{dim}_{R} E_{t, i}^{n}=n_{i}$.

Proof. Clearly $\binom{n}{t}>\binom{n}{t-1}$ and $n-2 t \geq 0$. If $t=0$, then $v_{0}^{-}$has only one zero eigenvalue. Now let $t>0$ and by induction hypothesis, for $0 \leq i \leq t-1$, let $\lambda_{t-2, i}$ be non-negative eigenvalues of $v_{t-1}^{-}$, with multiplicity $n_{i}$. Thus there exist non-zero eigenvectors $w_{i} \in R L_{t-1}^{n}$ such that $v_{t-1}^{-}\left(w_{i}\right)=\lambda_{t-2, i} w_{i}$ and by Lemma 4.1.4

$$
v_{t-1}^{+}\left(w_{i}\right)=v_{t-1}^{-}\left(w_{i}\right)+(n-2 t+2) w_{i}=\left[\lambda_{t-2, i}+(n-2 t+2)\right] w_{i} .
$$

Called $\lambda_{t-1, i}=\lambda_{t-2, i}+(n-2 t+2)$, it is clear that $\lambda_{t-1, i}$ are positive eigenvalues of $v_{t-1}^{+}$, with $i=0, \cdots, t-1$. By Lemma 4.2.1 $v_{t-1}^{+}$and $v_{t}^{-}$have the same non-zero eigenvalues, we deduce that they are

$$
\lambda_{t-1,0}>\lambda_{t-1,1}>\cdots>\lambda_{t-1, t-1}
$$

Since $\operatorname{dim} R L_{t}^{n}>\operatorname{dim} R L_{t-1}^{n}$, it follows that there exists a zero eigenvalue $\lambda_{t-1, t}$ of $v_{t}^{-}$, with multiplicity $\binom{n}{t}-\binom{n}{t-1}$.

Applying again Lemma 4.1.4, we obtain the eigenvalues of $v_{t}^{+}$:

$$
\lambda_{t, 0}>\lambda_{t, 1}>\cdots>\lambda_{t, t-1}>\lambda_{t, t} \geq 0
$$

where

$$
\lambda_{t, i}:=\lambda_{t-1, i}+(n-2 t)>0,
$$

with $0 \leq i \leq t-1$, and $\lambda_{t, t}=0+n-2 t \geq 0$. From $v_{t}^{+}=v_{t}^{-}+(n-2 t) i d_{t}$ follows that $v_{t}^{+}$and $v_{t}^{-}$have the same eigenspaces. So $\lambda_{t, i}$ has multiplicity $n_{i}$, for $0 \leq i \leq t$.

Theorem 4.2.3. If $2 t>n$ and $0<t \leq n$, then $v_{t}^{-}$has $n-t+1$ positive eigenvalues. In particular we have the decomposition

$$
\begin{equation*}
R L_{t}^{n}=E_{t, 0}^{n} \oplus E_{t, 1}^{n} \oplus \cdots \oplus E_{t, n-t-1}^{n} \oplus E_{t, n-t}^{n} \tag{4.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. We prove the Theorem for induction on $n-t$. Let $n-t=0$, so $v_{n}^{-}: R L_{n}^{n} \rightarrow R L_{n}^{n}$ is defined by $v_{n}^{-}(\Omega)=n \Omega$. The claim follows. Now we take $n-t>0$ and we suppose that the statement is true for $n-t-1 \geq 0$, i.e. for $t+1 \leq n$. So $v_{t+1}^{-}=\epsilon_{t}^{t+1} \partial_{t+1}^{t}: R L_{t+1}^{n} \rightarrow R L_{t+1}^{n}$ has eigenvalues

$$
\lambda_{t, 0}>\lambda_{t, 1}>\cdots>\lambda_{t, n-t-1}>0
$$

with multiplicity $n_{i}=\binom{n}{i}-\binom{n}{i-1}$, for $i=0, \cdots, n-t-1$. By Lemma 4.2.1, $v_{t+1}^{-}$and $v_{t}^{+}$ have the same non-zero eigenvalues. Since $\operatorname{dim} R L_{t}^{n}>\operatorname{dim} R L_{t+1}^{n}$, we have that $v_{t}^{+}$has an eigenvalue $\lambda_{t, n-t}=0$ with multiplicity $\binom{n}{t}-\binom{n}{t+1}=\binom{n}{n-t}-\binom{n}{n-t-1}$.

For any $\lambda_{t, i}$ there exists a non-zero eigenvector $w_{i}$ such that $v_{t}^{+}\left(w_{i}\right)=\lambda_{t, i} w_{i}$. So, by Lemma 4.1.4,

$$
v_{t}^{-}\left(w_{i}\right)=v_{t}^{+}\left(w_{i}\right)-(n-2 t) w_{i}=\left(\lambda_{t, i}-n+2 t\right) w_{i}
$$

Put $\lambda_{t-1, i}=\lambda_{t, i}-n+2 t$, for $i=0, \cdots, n-t$, we have $\lambda_{t-1, i}>0$ with multiplicity $n_{i}$. Called $E_{t, i}^{n}$ the eigenspaces associated to $\lambda_{t, i}$, for any $i=0, \cdots, n-t$, we have that $\operatorname{dim} E_{t, i}^{n}=n_{i}$ and $R L_{t}^{n}=E_{t, 0}^{n} \oplus E_{t, 1}^{n} \oplus \cdots \oplus E_{t, n-t-1}^{n} \oplus E_{t, n-t}^{n}$.

The decompositions 4.3 and 4.4 give the scheme in Table 4.1.
In the sequel we use the following notation: $t^{\prime}=\min \{t, n-t\}$.
Remark 4.2.4. We note that $\epsilon_{t}^{t+1}\left(E_{t, i}^{n}\right)=0$ if and only if $i=t^{\prime}$ and $t \geq n / 2$, while $\partial_{t}^{t-1}\left(E_{t, i}^{n}\right)=0$ if and only if $i=t^{\prime}$ and $t \leq n / 2$. Except this cases, by Lemma 4.2.1 and Theorems 4.2.2 and 4.2.3, the maps $\epsilon_{t}^{t+1}$ and $\partial_{t+1}^{t}$ restrict to isomorphisms

$$
\epsilon_{t}^{t+1}: E_{t, j}^{n} \rightarrow E_{t+1, j}^{n}, \quad \quad \partial_{t+1}^{t}: E_{t+1, j}^{n} \rightarrow E_{t, j}^{n}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& R L_{n}^{n}=E_{n, 0}^{n} \\
& \text { ไI } \\
& R L_{n-1}^{n}=E_{n-1,0}^{n} \oplus E_{n-1,1}^{n} \\
& \text { \II 2l| } \\
& \vdots \quad=\begin{array}{cccc}
\vdots & \vdots & \ldots & \ddots \\
\text { थ\| } & \text { था } & &
\end{array} \\
& R L_{t}^{n}=E_{t, 0}^{n} \quad \oplus E_{t, 1}^{n} \quad \oplus \cdots \cdots E_{t, t-1}^{n} \oplus E_{t, t}^{n} \\
& 211 \\
& \text { 2II } \\
& \text { 2II } \\
& R L_{t-1}^{n}=E_{t-1,0}^{n} \\
& \oplus \quad E_{t-1,1}^{n} \\
& \oplus \quad \cdots \\
& \oplus \quad E_{t-1, t-1}^{n}
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& 211 \\
& R L_{0}^{n}=E_{0,0}^{n}
\end{aligned}
$$

Table 4.1: Eigenspace Decomposition
for $0 \leq j \leq t^{\prime}$. In other words, all modules in the same column of Table 4.1 are isomorphic to each other via powers of $\epsilon_{t}^{t+1}$ or $\partial_{t+1}^{t}$. In particular,

$$
E_{0,0}^{n}, E_{1,0}^{n}, E_{2,0}, \cdots, E_{n, 0}^{n}
$$

have dimension 1, while

$$
E_{1,1}^{n}, E_{2,1}^{n}, E_{3,1}^{n}, \cdots, E_{n-1,1}^{n}
$$

have dimension $\binom{n}{1}-\binom{n}{0}$, and so on.

In the sequel if there is not confusion, we write $E_{t, i}$ instead $E_{t, i}^{n}$.

Corollary 4.2.5. Let $0 \leq t \leq n$ and let $\mathbb{Q} \subseteq R$ be a field. Then the eigenvalues of $v_{t}^{+}: R L_{t}^{n} \rightarrow R L_{t}^{n}$ are

$$
\lambda_{t, i}=(t-i+1)(n-t-i) \geq 0 \text { with multiplicity }\binom{n}{i}-\binom{n}{i-1},
$$

for $i=0, \cdots, t^{\prime}$.

Proof. Applying induction on $t$ and using Lemma 4.1.4, Theorems 4.2.2 and 4.2.3, we have
$\lambda_{t, i}=\sum_{i \leq j \leq t}(n-2 j)=(t-i+1) n-2(i+\cdots+t)=(t-i+1) n-2\left(\frac{t(t+1)}{2}-\frac{i(i-1)}{2}\right)=$ $(t-i+1)(n-t-i)$, with multiplicity $\binom{n}{i}-\binom{n}{i-1}$.

In the following we will assume $R=\mathbb{Q}$ as the eigenvalues of $v_{t}^{+}$are rational numbers.

Corollary 4.2.6. For each $0 \leq t \leq n$ and $0 \leq i \leq t^{\prime}$, the eigenspaces $E_{t, i}$ are $\operatorname{Sym}(n)$ invariant.

Proof. Let $f \in E_{t, i}$ for some $0 \leq i \leq t^{\prime} \leq n$ and let $g \in \operatorname{Sym}(n)$. Then

$$
v^{+}\left(f^{g}\right)=\left(v^{+}(f)\right)^{g}=\lambda_{t, i} f^{g}
$$

This means that $f^{g}$ is an eigenvector of $v^{+}$with eigenvalue $\lambda_{t, i}$ and so $f^{g} \in E_{t, i}$. Hence the $E_{t, i}$ are $\operatorname{Sym}(n)$-invariant.

Theorem 4.2.7. Each of the $E_{t, i}$, for $0 \leq i \leq t^{\prime}$, is $\mathbb{Q} S y m(n)$-irreducible.

Proof. Take $x \in L_{t}^{n}$. Then the stabilizer in $\operatorname{Sym}(n)$ of $x$ has $t^{\prime}+1$ orbits on $L_{t}^{n}$, corresponding to the possible intersection cardinalities of $y \cap x$ for $y \in L_{t}^{n}$. In other words, $\operatorname{Sym}(n)$ has permutation rank $t^{\prime}+1$ on $L_{t}^{n}$. Therefore $\mathbb{Q} L_{t}^{n}$ decomposes into at
most $t^{\prime}+1$ irreducibles. Since the decomposition of $\mathbb{Q} L_{t}^{n}$ already has $t^{\prime}+1$ summands which are $\operatorname{Sym}(n)$-invariant it follows that each of the summands is irreducible. The dimension of $E_{t, i}$ is the multiplicity $\binom{n}{i}-\binom{n}{i-1}$ of $\lambda_{t, i}$ and as these are pairwise distinct for $i=0, \cdots, t^{\prime}$ the $E_{t, i}$ are pairwise non-isomorphic.

Theorem 4.2.8. Let $0 \leq t<k \leq n$, with $t+k \leq n$. Then we have

$$
\begin{gather*}
\mathbb{Q} L_{k}^{n}=E_{k 0} \oplus E_{k 1} \oplus \cdots \oplus E_{k t} \oplus K \\
\mathbb{Q} L_{t}^{n}=E_{t 0} \oplus E_{t 1} \oplus \cdots \oplus E_{t t} \tag{4.5}
\end{gather*}
$$

where

$$
K=E_{k, t+1} \oplus \cdots \oplus E_{k, k^{\prime}}
$$

is the kernel of $\partial_{t+1}^{t} \cdots \partial_{k}^{k-1}: \mathbb{Q} L_{k}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{Q} L_{t}^{n}$. Furthermore, $E_{k, i} \cong E_{t, i}$ for $0 \leq i \leq t$. We have $E_{k, i} \cong E_{t, j}$ if and only if $i=j$ and furthermore $\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}}\left(E_{k, i}\right)=n_{i}=\binom{n}{i}-\binom{n}{i-1}$.

Proof. We consider the maps $\epsilon_{t}^{k}: \mathbb{Q} L_{t}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{Q} L_{k}^{n}$ defined by

$$
\epsilon_{t}^{k}(x):=\sum_{y \supseteq x} y, \text { with } y \in L_{k}^{n}
$$

for $x \in L_{t}^{n}$ and $\partial_{k}^{t}: \mathbb{Q} L_{k}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{Q} L_{t}^{n}$ defined by

$$
\partial_{k}^{t}(y):=\sum_{x \subseteq y} x, \text { with } x \in L_{t}^{n}
$$

for $y \in L_{k}^{n}$. These maps can be expressed as powers of $\epsilon$ and $\partial$. Let $d=k-t$. Then there are (d!) distinct chains $x=x_{0} \subset x_{1} \subset \cdots \subset x_{d}=y$ of subsets of $\Omega$ for any $y$ appearing in $\epsilon_{t}^{k}(x)$. Therefore

$$
\begin{equation*}
\epsilon_{t}^{k}=(d!)^{-1} \epsilon_{k-1}^{k} \epsilon_{k-2}^{k-1} \cdots \epsilon_{t}^{t+1} \tag{4.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

and similarly

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{k}^{t}=(d!)^{-1} \partial_{t+1}^{t} \partial_{t+2}^{t+1} \cdots \partial_{k}^{k-1} \tag{4.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $E_{t, i}$ and $E_{k, i}$ be the eigenspaces in 4.3 and 4.4. Since $0 \leq t<k \leq n$ and $t+k \leq n$ we have $t=\min \{t, n-t\} \leq \min \{k, n-k\}$. From 4.6 and 4.7 it follows that $\epsilon_{t}^{k}$ restricts to an injective map $E_{t, i} \rightarrow E_{k, i}$ and that $\partial_{k}^{t}$ restricts to a surjective map $E_{k, i} \rightarrow E_{t, i}$ for each $i=0, \cdots, t$. The eigenvalues of $\partial_{k}^{t} \epsilon_{t}^{k}$ can be computed from 4.6 and 4.7 using Corollary 4.2.5.

This decomposition is called the spectral decomposition of the incidence structure $I_{t k}^{n}=\left(L_{t}^{n}, L_{k}^{n} ; \subseteq\right)$.

### 4.3 Polytopes

Now the next thing to do is to give to $\mathbb{Q} L_{t}^{n}$ a generating set of eigenvectors. To this end, drawing from [4] we introduce the so-called polytopes.

In the sequel, we will consider the natural order in $\Omega$.

Definition 4.3.1. Let $0 \leq t \leq n, 0 \leq i \leq t^{\prime}$ and $j=t-i$. If $\alpha_{1}, \cdots, \alpha_{i}, \beta_{1}, \cdots, \beta_{i}$ are pairwise distinct elements of $\Omega$ and $\gamma_{1}, \cdots, \gamma_{u}$ the collection of all $j$-subsets of $\Omega \backslash\left\{\alpha_{1}, \cdots, \alpha_{i}, \beta_{1}, \cdots, \beta_{i}\right\}$, then we define a polytope of type ( $t, i$ ), with head

$$
\left(\alpha_{1}-\beta_{1}\right) \cdots\left(\alpha_{i}-\beta_{i}\right)
$$

and tail

$$
\left(\gamma_{1}+\cdots+\gamma_{u}\right)
$$

to be the element

$$
s_{t, i}:=\left[\alpha_{1}, \cdots, \alpha_{i} ; \beta_{1}, \cdots, \beta_{i}\right]_{j}=\left(\alpha_{1}-\beta_{1}\right) \cdots\left(\alpha_{i}-\beta_{i}\right)\left(\gamma_{1}+\cdots+\gamma_{u}\right) \in \mathbb{Q} L_{t}^{n} .
$$

Denote the set of all polytopes of type $(t, i)$ by $S_{t, i}^{n}$ and $S_{t}^{n}=S_{t, 0}^{n} \cup \cdots \cup S_{t, t^{\prime}}^{n}$.

Example 4.3.2. If $n=6$ and $t=2$, then the element

$$
s_{2,1}=(\{1\}-\{2\})(\{3\}+\{4\}+\{5\}+\{6\})
$$

is a polytope of type $(2,1)$. Now we write explicitly $s_{2,1}$ as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\{1,3\}+\{1,4\}+\{1,5\}+\{1,6\}-\{2,3\}-\{2,4\}-\{2,5\}-\{2,6\} . \tag{4.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

For every set x that appears in 4.8 we say that $x$ occurs in the expansion of the polytope. For example the set $\{2,3\}$ occurs in the expansion of $s_{2,1}$ with coefficient -1 .

Remark 4.3.3. The group $\operatorname{Sym}(n)$ acts on $S_{t}^{n}$ with orbits $S_{t, i}^{n}$.

For convenience put $s_{t, i}=0$ if $s_{t, i}$ is undefined, for instance if $t<0, n<t, t^{\prime}<i$ or $n<2 i$.

We define two maps which arise for polytopes.

Definition 4.3.4. For $0 \leq t \leq n$ and $0 \leq i \leq t^{\prime}$, we define the tail-extension

$$
+: S_{t, i}^{n} \rightarrow S_{t+1, i}^{n}
$$

by

$$
s_{t, i}=\left[\alpha_{1}, \cdots, \alpha_{i} ; \beta_{1}, \cdots, \beta_{i}\right]_{j} \rightarrow s_{t, i}^{+}=\left[\alpha_{1}, \cdots, \alpha_{i} ; \beta_{1}, \cdots, \beta_{i}\right]_{j+1} .
$$

Similarly, the tail-cutting map

$$
-: S_{t, i}^{n} \rightarrow S_{t-1, i}^{n}
$$

by

$$
s_{t, i}=\left[\alpha_{1}, \cdots, \alpha_{i} ; \beta_{1}, \cdots, \beta_{i}\right]_{j} \rightarrow s_{t, i}^{-}=\left[\alpha_{1}, \cdots, \alpha_{i} ; \beta_{1}, \cdots, \beta_{i}\right]_{j-1}
$$

Remark 4.3.5. Note that $s_{t, i}^{+}=0$ when $t \geq \frac{n}{2}$ and $i=t^{\prime}$, and that $s_{t, i}^{-}=0$ when $t \leq \frac{n}{2}$ and $i=t^{\prime}$. Apart from these cases the tail-extension and tail-cutting are functions which are inverse to each other.

We remember the Leibniz Rule that will be used in 4.3.7.
Lemma 4.3.6. (Leibniz Rule) If $f, h$ in $\mathbb{Q} L^{n}$ are disjoint then $\partial(f \cdot h)=\partial(f) \cdot h+f \cdot \partial(h)$.

Proof. It is enough to consider the case when $f=x$ and $h=y$ are subsets of $\Omega$. In this case it is obvious and the remainder follows by linearity.

Lemma 4.3.7. Let $0 \leq t \leq n$ and $0 \leq i \leq t^{\prime}$. Then
(a) $\partial\left(s_{t, i}\right)=(n-t-i+1) s_{t, i}^{-}$;
(b) $s_{t, i} \in E_{t, i}$.

Proof. (a) Note that $\partial(\alpha-\beta)=\emptyset-\emptyset=0$ and hence by Lemma 4.3.6 we have
(a.1) $\partial\left(\left(\alpha_{1}-\beta_{1}\right) \cdots\left(\alpha_{i}-\beta_{i}\right)\right)=0$,
(a.2) Let $s_{t, i}=\left(\alpha_{1}-\beta_{1}\right) \cdots\left(\alpha_{i}-\beta_{i}\right)\left(\gamma_{1}+\cdots+\gamma_{u}\right)$. Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \partial\left(\left(\alpha_{1}-\beta_{1}\right) \cdots\left(\alpha_{i}-\beta_{i}\right)\left(\gamma_{1}+\cdots+\gamma_{u}\right)\right)=\partial\left(\left(\alpha_{1}-\beta_{1}\right) \cdots\left(\alpha_{i}-\beta_{i}\right)\right) \\
& \left(\gamma_{1}+\cdots+\gamma_{u}\right)+\left(\alpha_{1}-\beta_{1}\right) \cdots\left(\alpha_{i}-\beta_{i}\right) \partial\left(\gamma_{1}+\cdots+\gamma_{u}\right)= \\
& \quad=\left(\alpha_{1}-\beta_{1}\right) \cdots\left(\alpha_{i}-\beta_{i}\right) \partial\left(\gamma_{1}+\cdots+\gamma_{u}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Clearly, $\partial\left(\gamma_{1}+\cdots+\gamma_{u}\right)$ is equal to a constant $\delta$ times the sum of all $(t-i-1)$-subsets of $\Omega \backslash\left\{\alpha_{1}, \cdots, \alpha_{i}, \beta_{1}, \cdots, \beta_{i}\right\}$. Therefore $\delta=(n-t-i+1)$.
(b) Let $i=t=t^{\prime}$ and consider a polytope $s_{i, i}=\left(\alpha_{1}-\beta_{1}\right) \cdots\left(\alpha_{i}-\beta_{i}\right)$ of type $(i, i)$. We prove that $s_{i, i} \in E_{i, i}$. By Lemma 4.3.6 we have $\partial\left(s_{i, i}\right)=0$. So $s_{i, i} \in \operatorname{Ker}(\partial)=E_{i, i}$, by Theorem 4.2.8.

In general, let $s_{t, i}=\left(\alpha_{1}-\beta_{1}\right) \cdots\left(\alpha_{i}-\beta_{i}\right)\left(\gamma_{1}+\cdots+\gamma_{u}\right)$ be a polytope of type $(t, i)$. By part (a), applying $(t-i)$-times the map $\partial$, we get

$$
\partial^{t-i}\left(s_{t, i}\right)=c\left(\alpha_{1}-\beta_{1}\right) \cdots\left(\alpha_{i}-\beta_{i}\right),
$$

for some $c \in \mathbb{Q}$. On the other hand if $s_{n-i, i}$ is the polytope of type $(n-i, i)$ with head $\left(\alpha_{1}-\beta_{1}\right) \cdots\left(\alpha_{i}-\beta_{i}\right)$, for some $a, b \in \mathbb{Q}$ we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial^{n-i-t}\left(s_{n-i, i}\right)=a s_{t, i}, \tag{4.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial^{n-2 i}\left(s_{n-i, i}\right)=b\left(\alpha_{1}-\beta_{1}\right) \cdots\left(\alpha_{i}-\beta_{i}\right) . \tag{4.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $\partial^{n-2 i}$ is an isomorphism between $\mathbb{Q} L_{n-i}^{n}$ and $\mathbb{Q} L_{i}^{n}$ (see table 4.1), which restricts to an isomorphism between $E_{n-i, i}$ and $E_{i, i}$, we have that $s_{n-i, i} \in E_{n-i, i}$, by equation 4.10 . Using equation 4.9 we conclude that $s_{t, i} \in E_{t, i}$, as $\partial^{n-i-t}$ is an isomorphism from $E_{n-i, i}$ to $E_{t, i}$.

Theorem 4.3.8. Let $0 \leq t \leq n$ and $0 \leq i \leq t^{\prime}$. Then the polytopes of type $(t, i)$ span $E_{t, i}$ as a vector space.

Proof. We prove the statement distinguishing two cases

Case $1 i=t=t^{\prime}$. Fix a polytope $s_{i, i}$ in $E_{i, i}$ and consider the space

$$
\operatorname{span}_{\mathbb{Q}}\left\{s_{i, i}^{g}: g \in \operatorname{Sym}(n)\right\} .
$$

This is a subspace of $E_{i, i}$ and by construction it is $\operatorname{Sym}(n)$-invariant. Since $E_{i, i}$ is irreducible, by Theorem 4.2.7, $E_{i, i}=\operatorname{span}\left\{s_{i, i}^{g}: g \in \operatorname{Sym}(n)\right\}$. So the set of all polytopes of type $(i, i)$ is a generating set of $E_{i i}$, for $0 \leq i \leq \frac{n}{2}$.

Case 2 Now, let $s_{t, i}$ be a polytope of type ( $t, i$ ). By Lemma 4.3.7, $s_{t, i} \in E_{t, i}$. Since the power of $\partial$ is an isomorphism between $E_{t, i}$ and $E_{i, i}$, by Case 1 and part (a) of Lemma 4.3.7, we have that the set of all polytopes of type $(t, i)$ is a spanning set of $E_{t, i}$.

Corollary 4.3.9. Let $0 \leq t \leq n$ and $0 \leq i \leq t^{\prime}$. Then

$$
\epsilon\left(s_{t, i}\right)=(t+1-i) s_{t, i}^{+} .
$$

Proof. If $i<n-t$, as $s_{t, i} \in E_{t, i}$, by Corollary 4.2.5 we have

$$
\partial \epsilon\left(s_{t, i}\right)=v_{t}^{+}\left(s_{t, i}\right)=(t+1-i)(n-t-i) s_{t, i}
$$

Using Lemma 4.3.7 applied to $s_{t, i}^{+}$, we get $\partial \epsilon\left(s_{t, i}\right)=(t+1-i)(n-t-i) s_{t, i}=(t+1-i) \partial\left(s_{t, i}^{+}\right)$.
Since $\partial$ is an isomorphism between $E_{t+1, i}$ and $E_{t, i}$, we deduce that

$$
\epsilon\left(s_{t, i}\right)=(t+1-i) s_{t, i}^{+} .
$$

If $i=n-t$ then $\epsilon\left(s_{t, i}\right)=0$, since $\epsilon\left(E_{t, n-t}\right)=0$, by remark 4.2.4.

Obviously we have
Corollary 4.3.10. The tail-extension and tail-cutting maps extend to $\mathbb{Q} \operatorname{Sym}(n)$-isomorphisms

$$
+: E_{t, i} \rightarrow E_{t+1, i} \quad \text { and } \quad-: E_{t, i} \rightarrow E_{t-1, i},
$$

for $0 \leq t \leq n$ and $0 \leq i \leq t^{\prime}$, except the particular cases seen in remark 4.3.5.

Proof. From Lemma 4.2.1 we have that the maps

$$
\epsilon_{t}^{t+1}: E_{t, i} \rightarrow E_{t+1, i} \quad \text { and } \quad \partial_{t+1}^{t}: E_{t+1, i} \rightarrow E_{t, i}
$$

are isomorphisms. Applying Lemmas 4.3.7 and 4.3.9 we get the claim.
Notation 4.3.11. Put $d=k-t$, we denote by $s_{t, i}^{+d}$ the polytope obtained from $s_{t, i}$ by $d$-fold tail-extension. Similarly $s_{k, i}^{-d}$ is the polytope obtained from $s_{k, i}$ by d-fold tail-cutting,

Remark 4.3.12. Let $0 \leq t<k \leq n$, with $t+k \leq n$, and $d=k-t$. Using repeatedly Lemma 4.3.9 we have

$$
\left(\epsilon_{k-1}^{k} \epsilon_{k-2}^{k-1} \cdots \epsilon_{t}^{t+1}\right)\left(s_{t, i}\right)=(k-i)(k-i-1) \cdots(t-i+1) s_{t, i}^{+d}
$$

Since $(k-t)!\epsilon_{t}^{k}=\left(\epsilon_{k-1}^{k} \epsilon_{k-2}^{k-1} \cdots \epsilon_{t}^{t+1}\right)$ we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\epsilon_{t}^{k}\left(s_{t, i}\right)=\frac{(k-i)(k-i-1) \cdots(t-i+1)}{(k-t)!} s_{t, i}^{+d}=\binom{k-i}{t-i} s_{t, i}^{+d}, \tag{4.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

Remark 4.3.13. Let $0 \leq t \leq k \leq n$, with $t+k \leq n$, and $d=k-t$. Using repeatedly Lemma 4.3.7 we have

$$
\left(\partial_{t+1}^{t} \partial_{t+2}^{t+1} \cdots \partial_{k}^{k-1}\right)\left(s_{k, i}\right)=(n-k-i+1) \cdots(n-t-i-1)(n-t-i) s_{k, i}^{-d}
$$

Since $(k-t)!\partial_{k}^{t}=\left(\partial_{t+1}^{t} \partial_{t+2}^{t+1} \cdots \partial_{k}^{k-1}\right)$ we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{k}^{t}\left(s_{k, i}\right)=\frac{(n-k-i+1) \cdots(n-t-i-1)(n-t-i)}{(k-t)!} s_{k, i}^{-d}=\binom{n-t-i}{n-k-i} s_{k, i}^{-d} \tag{4.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

### 4.4 Standard basis of polytopes

Let $\mathbb{Z} S_{t}^{n}$ be the submodule generated by the set of all polytopes $S_{t}^{n}$. The aim of this section is to find a basis for $\mathbb{Z} S_{t}^{n}$, called "standard basis", which will be essential in section 4.5.

We know that $\mathbb{Z} S_{t, i}^{n} \subseteq E_{t, i}$ and we observe that

$$
\mathbb{Z} S_{t}^{n}=\mathbb{Z} S_{t, 0}^{n} \oplus \mathbb{Z} S_{t, 1}^{n} \oplus \cdots \oplus \mathbb{Z} S_{t, t^{\prime}}^{n}
$$

Definition 4.4.1. Let

$$
s_{t, i}=\left[\alpha_{1}, \cdots, \alpha_{i} ; \beta_{1}, \cdots, \beta_{i}\right]_{t-i}:=\left(\alpha_{1}-\beta_{1}\right) \cdots\left(\alpha_{i}-\beta_{i}\right) \cdot\left(\gamma_{1}+\cdots+\gamma_{s}\right)
$$

be a polytope of type $(t, i)$, with $i \leq t^{\prime}$. Then

1. if $i=0, s_{t, 0}$ is a "standard polytope",
2. if $i>0$, we say that $s_{t, i}$ is a "standard polytope" provided that
(a) $\alpha_{1}<\alpha_{2}<\cdots<\alpha_{i}$ and $\beta_{1}<\beta_{2}<\cdots<\beta_{i}$,
(b) $\alpha_{i}<\delta$ for all $\delta \in \Omega \backslash\left\{\alpha_{1}, \cdots, \alpha_{i}, \beta_{1}, \cdots, \beta_{i}\right\}$, and
(c) $\alpha_{j}<\beta_{j}$ for all $1 \leq j \leq i$.

Example 4.4.2. If $n=6$ and $t=2$, we have the following standard polytopes

- of type $(2,0)$ :
$\{1,2\}+\{1,3\}+\{1,4\}+\{1,5\}+\{1,6\}+\{2,3\}+\{2,4\}+\{2,5\}+\{2,6\}+\{3,4\}+$
$\{3,5\}+\{3,6\}+\{4,5\}+\{4,6\}+\{5,6\} ;$
- of type $(2,1)$ :
$(\{1\}-\{2\})(\{3\}+\{4\}+\{5\}+\{6\}), \quad(\{1\}-\{3\})(\{2\}+\{4\}+\{5\}+\{6\})$,
$(\{1\}-\{4\})(\{2\}+\{3\}+\{5\}+\{6\}), \quad(\{1\}-\{5\})(\{2\}+\{3\}+\{4\}+\{6\})$,
$(\{1\}-\{6\})(\{2\}+\{3\}+\{4\}+\{5\}) ;$
- of type $(2,2)$ :
$(\{1\}-\{2\})(\{3\}-\{4\}), \quad(\{1\}-\{2\})(\{3\}-\{5\}), \quad(\{1\}-\{2\})(\{3\}-\{6\})$,
$(\{1\}-\{3\})(\{2\}-\{4\}), \quad(\{1\}-\{3\})(\{2\}-\{5\}), \quad(\{1\}-\{3\})(\{2\}-\{6\})$,
$(\{1\}-\{4\})(\{2\}-\{5\}), \quad(\{1\}-\{4\})(\{2\}-\{6\}), \quad(\{1\}-\{5\})(\{2\}-\{6\})$.

Next Lemmas 4.4.3 and 4.4.5 prove that a standard polytope is actually determined by the set $\left\{\beta_{1}, \cdots, \beta_{i}\right\}$.

Lemma 4.4.3. Let $0<i \leq n / 2$ and $s_{i, i}=\left(\alpha_{1}-\beta_{1}\right) \cdots\left(\alpha_{i}-\beta_{i}\right), \bar{s}_{i, i}=\left(\bar{\alpha}_{1}-\bar{\beta}_{1}\right) \cdots\left(\bar{\alpha}_{i}-\bar{\beta}_{i}\right)$ be distinct standard polytopes of type $(i, i)$. Then the sets $x=\left\{\beta_{1}, \cdots, \beta_{i}\right\}$ and $\bar{x}=$ $\left\{\bar{\beta}_{1}, \cdots, \bar{\beta}_{i}\right\}$ are distinct.

Proof. Suppose that the ordered sets $x$ and $\bar{x}$ are equal, that is $\beta_{j}=\bar{\beta}_{j}$, for $j=1, \cdots, i$. As $s_{i, i} \neq \bar{s}_{i, i}$, let $j_{0}$ be the smallest index such that $\alpha_{j_{0}} \neq \bar{\alpha}_{j_{0}}$. We write

$$
s_{i, i}=\left(\alpha_{1}-\beta_{1}\right) \cdots\left(\alpha_{j_{0}-1}-\beta_{j_{0}-1}\right)\left(\alpha_{j_{0}}-\beta_{j_{0}}\right) \cdots\left(\alpha_{i}-\beta_{i}\right)
$$

and

$$
\bar{s}_{i, i}=\left(\alpha_{1}-\beta_{1}\right) \cdots\left(\alpha_{j_{0}-1}-\beta_{j_{0}-1}\right)\left(\bar{\alpha}_{j_{0}}-\beta_{j_{0}}\right) \cdots\left(\bar{\alpha}_{i}-\beta_{i}\right) .
$$

In particular, without loss of generality, we can suppose that $\alpha_{j_{0}}<\bar{\alpha}_{j_{0}}$; by definition 4.4.1, we have that $\alpha_{j_{0}}$ does not appear in the polytope $\bar{s}_{i, i}$.

So $\alpha_{j_{0}} \in \Omega \backslash\left\{\alpha_{1}, \cdots, \alpha_{j_{0}-1}, \bar{\alpha}_{j_{0}}, \cdots, \bar{\alpha}_{i}, \beta_{1}, \cdots, \beta_{i}\right\}$, contradicting the hypothesis $\bar{\alpha}_{j_{0}}<\delta$, for all $\delta \in \Omega \backslash\left\{\alpha_{1}, \cdots, \alpha_{j_{0}-1}, \bar{\alpha}_{j_{0}}, \cdots, \bar{\alpha}_{i}, \beta_{1}, \cdots, \beta_{i}\right\}$ (point 2 b of the definition 4.4.1).

In order to prove that if $x$ and $\bar{x}$ are distinct, then $s_{i, i} \neq \bar{s}_{i, i}$, we introduce the following order relation on $L_{t}^{n}$.

Definition 4.4.4. [6] (The reverse lexicographic order). We fix $1 \leq t \leq n$ and consider the reverse lexicographic order on $L_{t}^{n}$. That is for all $y, x \in L_{t}^{n}$ we say $y<x$ if and only if $\max (y \backslash x)<\max (x \backslash y)$.

Lemma 4.4.5. Let $0<i \leq n / 2$ and $s_{i, i}=\left(\alpha_{1}-\beta_{1}\right) \cdots\left(\alpha_{i}-\beta_{i}\right), \bar{s}_{i, i}=\left(\bar{\alpha}_{1}-\bar{\beta}_{1}\right) \cdots\left(\bar{\alpha}_{i}-\bar{\beta}_{i}\right)$ be standard polytopes of type (i,i) such that $x=\left\{\beta_{1}, \cdots, \beta_{i}\right\}$ and $\bar{x}=\left\{\bar{\beta}_{1}, \cdots, \bar{\beta}_{i}\right\}$ are distinct. Then $s_{i, i}$ and $\bar{s}_{i, i}$ are distinct.

Proof. As $x \neq \bar{x}$, without loss of generality, we can suppose $x<\bar{x}$, with respect to reverse lexicographic order. Now, we note that $x$ is the largest set $y$ for which $y$ occurs in the expansion of $s_{i, i}$. So $\bar{x}$ does not appear in $s_{i, i}$. It follows that $s_{i, i} \neq \bar{s}_{i, i}$.

As $x=\left\{\beta_{1}, \cdots, \beta_{i}\right\}$, with $\beta_{1}<\cdots<\beta_{i}$, determines the corresponding standard polytope $\left(\alpha_{1}-\beta_{1}\right) \cdots\left(\alpha_{i}-\beta_{i}\right)$ of type $(i, i)$, we put $s_{x}^{i}=\left(\alpha_{1}-\beta_{1}\right) \cdots\left(\alpha_{i}-\beta_{i}\right)$.

The $\mathbb{Q} \operatorname{Sym}(n)$-irreducible modules are well known. For reference on the representation of the symmetric groups $\operatorname{Sym}(n)$ see for example [10]. These $\mathbb{Q} \operatorname{Sym}(n)$-irreducible modules are the Specht modules. We are interested to find a basis for $E_{i, i}$. It is not difficult to see that the standard polytopes of type $(i, i)$ correspond one-to-one to the standard polytabloids, via the following correspondence

$$
e_{t a b(x)} \rightarrow s_{x}^{i}=\left(\alpha_{1}-\beta_{1}\right) \cdots\left(\alpha_{i}-\beta_{i}\right),
$$

where $e_{\operatorname{tab}(x)}$ is the standard polytabloid associated with the standard tableau

$$
\operatorname{tab}(x)=\begin{aligned}
& \alpha_{1}<\cdots<\alpha_{i}<\alpha_{i+1}<\cdots<\alpha_{n-i} \\
& \beta_{1}<\cdots<\beta_{i}
\end{aligned}
$$

Every partition $(n-i, i)$ of $n$ determines a Specht module, a basis of whose is given from standard polytabloids (see [10]).

We summarize this in the following lemma.
Lemma 4.4.6. Let $0 \leq i \leq \frac{n}{2}$. Then the standard polytopes of type ( $i, i$ ) correspond one-to-one to the standard polytabloids for the partition $(n-i, i)$ of $n$. Moreover the cardinality of the set of all standard polytopes of type $(i, i)$ is $\binom{n}{i}-\binom{n}{i-1}$.

We thank Prof. Antonio Pasini for the following alternative purely combinatoric proof of Lemma 4.4.6, that avoids any reference to polytabloids:

Proof. By induction on $i$, for $i=1, \cdots, \frac{n}{2}$, we prove that the cardinality of the set of all standard polytopes of type $(i, i)$ is $\binom{n}{i}-\binom{n}{i-1}$. The result is true for $i=1$, as $\{1\}-\{j\}$, with $j=2,3, \cdots, n$, are the $n-1=\binom{n}{1}-\binom{n}{0}$ standard polytopes. If $i>1$, we suppose that the statement is true for standard polytopes of type $(j, j)$, with $j<i$ and we count all the standard polytopes of type $(i, i)$. Let $\left(\alpha_{1}-\beta_{1}\right) \cdots\left(\alpha_{i}-\beta_{i}\right)$ be a standard polytope of type $(i, i) . \beta_{i}$ can be any value within the set $\{2 i, \cdots, n\}$. If $k+1$ is the value chosen for $\beta_{i}$, the other terms $\beta_{1}, \cdots, \beta_{i-1}$ must be selected within the set $\{1,2, \cdots, k\}$. By induction hypothesis the standard polytopes of type $\left(\alpha_{1}-\beta_{1}\right) \cdots\left(\alpha_{i-1}-\beta_{i-1}\right)$ are $\binom{k}{i-1}-\left({ }_{i-2}^{k}\right)$. So the number of standard polytopes of type $(i, i)$ is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{k=2 i-1}^{n-1}\left(\binom{k}{i-1}-\binom{k}{i-2}\right) \tag{4.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now it is enough to prove that the sum in equation 4.13 is equal to $\binom{n}{i}-\binom{n}{i-1}$, that is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{k=2 i-1}^{n-1}\left(\binom{k}{i-1}-\binom{k}{i-2}\right)=\binom{n}{i}-\binom{n}{i-1} . \tag{4.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

We prove the equation 4.14 by induction on $n \geq 2 i$. If $n=2 i, 4.14$ becomes

$$
\begin{equation*}
\binom{2 i-1}{i-1}-\binom{2 i-1}{i-2}=\binom{2 i}{i}-\binom{2 i}{i-1} \tag{4.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since

$$
\begin{aligned}
\binom{2 i}{i}-\binom{2 i}{i-1}= & \binom{2 i-1}{i}+\binom{2 i-1}{i-1}-\binom{2 i-1}{i-1}-\binom{2 i-1}{i-2}=\binom{2 i-1}{i}-\binom{2 i-1}{i-2}= \\
& =\binom{2 i-1}{i-1}-\binom{2 i-1}{i-2}
\end{aligned}
$$

the equation 4.15 holds.
Now we suppose that 4.14 holds for $n$ and we prove it for $n+1$, that is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{k=2 i-1}^{n}\left(\binom{k}{i-1}-\binom{k}{i-2}\right)=\binom{n+1}{i}-\binom{n+1}{i-1} \tag{4.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

We can rewrite 4.16 as follows:

$$
\left(\sum_{k=2 i-1}^{n-1}\left(\binom{k}{i-1}-\binom{k}{i-2}\right)+\binom{n}{i-1}-\binom{n}{i-2}=\binom{n}{i}-\binom{n}{i-2} .\right.
$$

By induction hypothesis we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\binom{n}{i}-\binom{n}{i-1}+\binom{n}{i-1}-\binom{n}{i-2}=\binom{n}{i}-\binom{n}{i-2} . \tag{4.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

The last equation is trivial. So the claim follows.

By Theorem 4.2.8, $\binom{n}{i}-\binom{n}{i-1}$ is the dimension of the vector space $E_{i, i}$. It is easy to realize that the set of all $s_{x}^{i}$ is linearly independent: this is immediate for $i=0$, and for $i>0$ we write explicitly the polytope $s_{x}^{i}$ (see example 4.4.8). We note that $x$ is the largest set $y$ (with respect to reverse lexicographic order) for which $y$ occurs in the expansion of $s_{x}^{i}$. Since different $x$ determine different standard polytopes (Lemma 4.4.5), it is not difficult to see that the set of all $s_{x}^{i}$ is linearly independent over $\mathbb{K}$. It is enough to consider the matrix whose columns are the coordinates of $s_{x}^{i}$ with respect to the basis $L_{i}^{n}$. This matrix contains a square triangular submatrix, of size $\binom{n}{i}-\binom{n}{i-1}$, which has $\pm 1$ on the main diagonal.

This proves the following Lemma
Lemma 4.4.7. Let $\mathbb{K}$ be an arbitrary field, $0 \leq i \leq n / 2$ and let $\mathbb{K} L_{i}^{n}$ be the vector space of basis $L_{i}^{n}$. Then the set of standard polytopes $s_{x}^{i}$ of type $(i, i)$ is linearly independent in $\mathbb{K} L_{i}^{n}$.

We clarify the proof of Lemma 4.4 .7 with an example.

Example 4.4.8. We refer back to Example 4.4.2 and we denote

$$
\mathcal{F}(6,2)=\{\{2,4\},\{2,5\},\{2,6\},\{3,4\},\{3,5\},\{3,6\},\{4,5\},\{4,6\},\{5,6\}\} .
$$

and
$s_{\{2,4\}}^{2}=(\{1\}-\{2\})(\{3\}-\{4\})$,
$s_{\{2,5\}}^{2}=(\{1\}-\{2\})(\{3\}-\{5\})$,
$s_{\{3,4\}}^{2}=(\{1\}-\{3\})(\{2\}-\{4\})$,
$s_{\{3,6\}}^{2}=(\{1\}-\{3\})(\{2\}-\{6\})$,
$s_{\{4,6\}}^{2}=(\{1\}-\{4\})(\{2\}-\{6\})$,
$s_{\{4,5\}}^{2}=(\{1\}-\{4\})(\{2\}-\{5\})$,
$s_{\{5,6\}}^{2}=(\{1\}-\{5\})(\{2\}-\{6\})$
the standard polytopes of type $(2,2)$.

We write every $s_{x}^{2}$ as linear combination of the elements of the canonical basis $L_{2}^{6}=\{\{1,2\},\{1,3\},\{1,4\},\{1,5\},\{1,6\},\{2,3\},\{2,4\},\{2,5\},\{2,6\},\{3,4\},\{3,5\},\{3,6\},\{4,5\}$, $\{4,6\},\{5,6\}\}$.

For example $s_{\{2,4\}}^{2}=(\{1\}-\{2\})(\{3\}-\{4\})=\{1,3\}-\{1,4\}-\{2,3\}+\{2,4\}$.

The dimension of the vector space $\mathbb{K} S_{2,2}^{6}$ is given from rank of the matrix $A$ of size $15 \times 9$, whose columns are the coordinates of all the standard polytopes of type $(2,2)$ with respect to the basis $L_{2}^{6}$.

$$
A=\left(\begin{array}{ccccccccc}
0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 1 & 1 & 1 & 1 & 1 \\
1 & 1 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
-1 & 0 & 0 & -1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & -1 & 0 & 0 & -1 & 0 & -1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & -1 & 0 & 0 & -1 & 0 & -1 & -1 \\
-1 & -1 & -1 & -1 & -1 & -1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & -1 & -1 & 0 \\
0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & -1 \\
0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right) .
$$

It is immediate to see that the last 9 rows are independent, so that $\operatorname{rank}(A)=9$ for any field $\mathbb{K}$ : if $B$ is the submatrix of $A$ consisting of the last 9 rows, then $\operatorname{det}(B)=1$.

We note that in the expansion of $s_{x}^{i}$ the set $x$ appears with coordinate $\pm 1$.
Our aim is to prove that the set of all standard polytopes of type $(t, i)$, for $i=0, \cdots, t^{\prime}$, forms a basis of the $\mathbb{Z}$-module $\mathbb{Z} S_{t}^{n}$.

Theorem 4.4.9. If $0 \leq i \leq t^{\prime}$, then the set of standard polytopes of type ( $t, i$ ) is a $\mathbb{Z}$-basis of $\mathbb{Z} S_{t, i}^{n}$, called standard basis. It follows that the union of all standard polytopes is a standard basis of

$$
\mathbb{Z} S_{t}^{n}=\mathbb{Z} S_{t, 0}^{n} \oplus \mathbb{Z} S_{t, 1}^{n} \oplus \cdots \oplus \mathbb{Z} S_{t, t^{\prime}}^{n}
$$

Proof. We observe that $i \leq \frac{n}{2}$, as $i \leq t^{\prime}$. Put $n_{i}=\binom{n}{i}-\binom{n}{i-1}$, by Theorem 4.2.8, we have $E_{i, i} \cong E_{t, i}$ and $\operatorname{dim} E_{i, i}=n_{i}$. Moreover, from Lemma 4.4.7, we get that the $n_{i}$ 's standard polytopes of type $(i, i)$ are linearly independent in $\mathbb{Z} S_{i, i}^{n} \subseteq \mathbb{Q} L_{i}^{n}$. Applying the map tail-extension, we obtain $n_{i}$ independent polytopes in $\mathbb{Z} S_{t, i}^{n}$. In particular we deduce that $\operatorname{rank}\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t, i}^{n}\right) \geq n_{i}$. Since $\mathbb{Z} S_{t, i}^{n} \subseteq E_{t, i}$ and $\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}} E_{t, i}=n_{i}$, it follows that $\operatorname{rank}\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t, i}^{n}\right)=n_{i}$, for any $t$ and $i \leq t^{\prime}$.

It remains to prove that they span $\mathbb{Z} S_{t, i}^{n}$. For this purpose we prove that the standard polytopes of type $(i, i)$ span $\mathbb{Z} S_{i, i}^{n}$. Let $L^{\prime}$ be the submodule of $\mathbb{Z} S_{i, i}^{n}$ spanned by standard polytopes of type $(i, i)$. We have $\operatorname{rank}\left(L^{\prime}\right)=\operatorname{rank}\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{i, i}^{n}\right)=n_{i}$, hence $\frac{Z S_{i, i}^{n}}{L^{\prime}}$ is a finite group. Suppose for contradiction that $\mathbb{Z} S_{i, i}^{n} \neq L^{\prime}$. Then there exist $w \in \mathbb{Z} S_{i, i}^{n} \backslash L^{\prime}$ and a prime $p$ such that $p w \in L^{\prime}$. We have

$$
\begin{equation*}
p w=\sum_{s_{x}^{i} \text { standard polytope }} a_{x} s_{x}^{i}, \tag{4.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $a_{x} \in \mathbb{Z}$ and not all divisible by p , otherwise $w \in L^{\prime}$. Reducing $\bmod \mathrm{p}$ the equation in 4.18, we infer that the set of standard polytopes of type $(i, i)$ is linearly dependent in $\mathbb{Z} / p \mathbb{Z}$. This contradicts Lemma 4.4.7. Thus $\mathbb{Z} S_{i, i}^{n}=L^{\prime}$. By tail-extension, $\mathbb{Z} S_{t, i}^{n}$ is spanned by standard polytopes of type $(t, i)$. It follows immediately that the union of all standard polytopes of type $(t, i)$, for each $0 \leq i \leq t^{\prime}$, forms a basis for $\mathbb{Z} S_{t}^{n}$.

Remark 4.4.10. Note that in general a basis of $\mathbb{Z} S_{i}^{n}$ is not a basis of $\mathbb{Z} L_{i}^{n}$.

Example 4.4.11. Going back to examples 4.4.2 and 4.4.8, we consider the expansion of every standard polytope of $\mathbb{Q} L_{2}^{6}$. The matrix of change of basis from the set of all standard polytopes to the canonical basis $L_{2}^{6}$ is

$$
B=\left(\begin{array}{ccccccccccccccc}
1 & 0 & 1 & 1 & 1 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 1 & 1 & 1 & 1 & 1 \\
1 & 1 & 0 & 1 & 1 & 1 & 1 & 1 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
1 & 1 & 1 & 0 & 1 & 1 & -1 & 0 & 0 & -1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
1 & 1 & 1 & 1 & 0 & 1 & 0 & -1 & 0 & 0 & -1 & 0 & -1 & 0 & 0 \\
1 & 1 & 1 & 1 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & -1 & 0 & 0 & -1 & 0 & -1 & -1 \\
1 & -1 & -1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & -1 & -1 & -1 & -1 & -1 & -1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
1 & -1 & 0 & -1 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & -1 & -1 & 0 \\
1 & -1 & 0 & 0 & -1 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & -1 \\
1 & -1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & -1 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
1 & 0 & -1 & -1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
1 & 0 & -1 & 0 & -1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
1 & 0 & -1 & 0 & 0 & -1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
1 & 0 & 0 & -1 & -1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\
1 & 0 & 0 & -1 & 0 & -1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\
1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & -1 & -1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right) .
$$

The determinant of $B$ is -15360 . This means that $B$ is not invertible in $\mathbb{Z}$ and the set of all standard polytopes is not a basis of $\mathbb{Z} L_{2}^{6}$. It follows that $\mathbb{Z} S_{2}^{6} \subset \mathbb{Z} L_{2}^{6}$.

This shows us that to find a diagonal form of $W_{t k}$ is not enough to consider a basis of polytopes of $\mathbb{Z} S_{t}^{n}$ and $\mathbb{Z} S_{k}^{n}$. This observation is the starting point of the next section, where we give our proof of Wilson's Theorem.

### 4.5 Wilson's Theorem via linear maps

In [15] R.M. Wilson proves that the incidence matrix $W_{t k}$ associated to the incidence structure $I_{t k}^{n}=\left(L_{t}^{n}, L_{k}^{n}, \subseteq\right)$, where $0 \leq t \leq k \leq n$ and $t+k \leq n$, is equivalent to a diagonal form, with non-zero diagonal entries $d_{i}=\binom{k-i}{t-i}$ and multiplicity $\binom{n}{i}-\binom{n}{i-1}$. For this purpose, he constructs a matrix $M_{t k}=\bigcup_{i=0}^{t} W_{i k}$ and he proves that it has index one and rank $\binom{n}{t}$, for any $t \leq k$ where $t+k \leq n$ (Proposition 3.1.3).

Now, the maps $\epsilon_{t}^{k}$ and $\partial_{k}^{t}$, which we have introduced in proof of Theorem 4.2.8 on vector spaces, restrict to $\mathbb{Z}$-modules

$$
\epsilon_{t}^{k}: \mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{Z} L_{k}^{n} \quad \text { and } \quad \partial_{k}^{t}: \mathbb{Z} L_{k}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n}
$$

The matrices associated to them, with respect to the bases $L_{t}^{n}$ and $L_{k}^{n}$ are $W_{t k}^{T}$ and $W_{t k}$, respectively. Thus to determine the invariant factors of $W_{t k}$ is equivalent to find the Smith group of $\epsilon_{t}^{k}: \mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{Z} L_{k}^{n}$.

We observe that, in terms of pure modules and linear maps, Wilson's Proposition 3.1.3 means that

$$
\epsilon_{0}^{k}\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{0}^{n}\right)+\cdots+\epsilon_{t}^{k}\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n}\right)
$$

is a pure submodule of $\mathbb{Z} L_{k}^{n}$ of $\operatorname{rank}\binom{n}{t}$.
In [2] T. Bier improves Wilson's Theorem showing that an opportune basis of $\mathbb{Z}$-module $\operatorname{row}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(M_{t k}\right)$ can be chosen from the rows of matrix $M_{t k}$ itself, as it contains a $\binom{n}{t} \times\binom{ n}{t}$ submatrix of index 1. Moreover, in [8] the authors modify slightly the concept of standard tableau to study the notion of rank of a finite set of positive integers, which was introduced by Frankl [6]. Utilizing this, they construct an incidence matrix equivalent to $M_{t k}$.

In this work, with arguments inspired by the results in previous papers ([2], [6] and [8]),
using the standard basis of polytopes of $\mathbb{Z} S_{j}^{n}$, we will explicitly construct a standard basis $C_{j}$ of $\mathbb{Z} L_{j}^{n}$, for $j=0, \cdots, n$, such that the matrix associated to $\epsilon_{t}^{k}$ with respect to $\mathcal{C}_{t}$ and $C_{k}$ is the diagonal form found by R.M. Wilson in [15].

We fix the following facts that will be used later. In the sequel, for convenience, put:

$$
\mathcal{F}(n, i)=\left\{x \in L_{i}^{n}: s_{x}^{i} \text { is a standard polytope of type }(i, i)\right\}
$$

(note that for $n=6$ and $i=2$, we already used the notation in Example 4.4.8).

For any $x_{i} \in \mathcal{F}(n, i)$, going back to the definition of $s_{x_{i}}^{i}$ we have:

1. $s_{x_{i}}^{i} \in \mathbb{Z} S_{i, i}^{n} \subseteq E_{i, i}$;
2. $\epsilon_{i}^{k}\left(s_{x_{i}}^{i}\right) \in \mathbb{Z} S_{k, i}^{n}$;
3. if $s_{x_{i}}^{i}=\left(\alpha_{1}-\beta_{1}\right) \cdots\left(\alpha_{i}-\beta_{i}\right)$, then $\epsilon_{i}^{k}\left(s_{x_{i}}^{i}\right)=\left(\alpha_{1}-\beta_{1}\right) \cdots\left(\alpha_{i}-\beta_{i}\right)\left(\gamma_{1}+\cdots+\gamma_{u}\right)$ is a standard polytope of type $(k, i)$, where $\gamma_{1}, \cdots, \gamma_{u}$ is the collection of all $(k-i)$ subsets of $\Omega \backslash\left\{\alpha_{1}, \cdots, \alpha_{i}, \beta_{1}, \cdots, \beta_{i}\right\}$;
4. the set

$$
\left\{\epsilon_{i}^{k}\left(s_{x_{i}}^{i}\right): s_{x_{i}}^{i} \text { standard polytope of type }(i, i), i=0, \cdots, t\right\}
$$

is a basis of $\mathbb{Z} S_{k, 0}^{n} \oplus \cdots \oplus \mathbb{Z} S_{k, t}^{n}$ (by Theorem 4.4.9 and points (1), (2) and (3)).

Our proof is given by three steps.

Step 1. We find the Smith group of $\epsilon_{t}^{k}: \mathbb{Z} S_{t}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{Z} S_{k}^{n}$ (see definition 2.4.21).
Theorem 4.5.1. Let $0 \leq t \leq k \leq n$ and $t+k \leq n$. Then the Smith group of

$$
\epsilon_{t}^{k}: \mathbb{Z} S_{t}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{Z} S_{k}^{n}
$$

is isomorphic to $\left(C_{d_{0}}\right)^{n_{0}} \times \cdots \times\left(C_{d_{t}}\right)^{n_{t}} \times \mathbb{Z}^{l}$, where $d_{i}=\binom{k-i}{t-i}$, $n_{i}=\binom{n}{i}-\binom{n}{i-1}$, for $i=0, \cdots, t$ and $l=\binom{n}{k}-\binom{n}{t}$.

Proof. If $t=k$ the claim is trivial, since $\epsilon_{t}^{t}$ is the identity map. So we assume $t \neq k$. Since $t<k$ and $t+k \leq n$, we have $\epsilon_{t}^{k}\left(E_{t, i}\right) \neq 0$, for all $i=0, \cdots, t$. In particular, if $f \in \mathbb{Z} S_{k}^{n}$ is written as $f=f_{k, 0}+f_{k, 1}+\cdots+f_{k, k^{\prime}}$, with $f_{k, j} \in \mathbb{Z} S_{k, j}^{n}$, then $f$ has finite order over $\epsilon_{t}^{k}\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t}^{n}\right)$ if and only if $f_{k, t+1}=\cdots=f_{k, k^{\prime}}=0$. Therefore the module of all elements $f \in \mathbb{Z} S_{k}^{n}$ which have finite order over $\epsilon_{t}^{k}\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t}^{n}\right)$ is

$$
\mathbb{Z} S_{k, 0}^{n} \oplus \cdots \oplus \mathbb{Z} S_{k, t}^{n}
$$

In particular,

$$
\mathbb{Z} S_{k}^{n} / \epsilon_{t}^{k}\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t}^{n}\right) \cong \mathbb{Z} S_{k, 0}^{n} / \epsilon_{t}^{k}\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t, 0}^{n}\right) \oplus \cdots \oplus \mathbb{Z} S_{k, t}^{n} / \epsilon_{t}^{k}\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t, t}^{n}\right) \oplus \mathbb{Z}^{l}
$$

where $l=\binom{n}{k}-\binom{n}{t}$.
Let $d=k-t$ and select some $0 \leq i \leq t$. Although we now introduce some other notation a little bit heavy for the reader, we prefer to give the proof using a general basis for $\mathbb{Z} S_{t}^{n}$. Let $B_{t, i}=\left\{s_{t, i, 1}, \cdots, s_{t, i, n_{i}}\right\}$ be a basis of $\mathbb{Z} S_{t, i}^{n}$, then replacing each $s_{t, i, j}$ by $s_{t, i, j}^{+d}$ we obtain a basis $B_{t, i}^{+d}=\left\{s_{t, i, 1}^{+d} \cdots, s_{t, i, n_{i}}^{+d}\right\}$ of $\mathbb{Z} S_{k, i}^{n}$ (see Notation 4.3.11).

Furthermore,

$$
\epsilon_{t}^{k}\left(s_{t, i, j}\right)=\binom{k-i}{t-i} s_{t, i, j}^{+d},
$$

with $1 \leq j \leq n_{i}$, by equation 4.11 . We conclude that $\mathbb{Z} S_{k, i}^{n} / \epsilon_{t}^{k}\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t, i}^{n}\right) \cong\left(C_{d_{i}}\right)^{n_{i}}$, where $d_{i}=\binom{k-i}{t-i}$ and $n_{i}=\binom{n}{i}-\binom{n}{i-1}$ and so

$$
\mathbb{Z} S_{k}^{n} / \epsilon_{t}^{k}\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t}^{n}\right) \cong\left(C_{d_{0}}\right)^{n_{0}} \times \cdots \times\left(C_{d_{t}}\right)^{n_{t}} \times \mathbb{Z}^{l},
$$

with $l=\binom{n}{k}-\binom{n}{t}$.

Step 2. Of fundamental importance are Lemmas 4.5.2 and 4.5.3.

Lemma 4.5.2. Let $1 \leq i \leq \frac{n}{2}$ and $x=\left\{\beta_{1}, \cdots, \beta_{i}\right\} \in L_{i}^{n}$ such that $n \in x$ and $\beta_{1}<\cdots<$ $\beta_{i}=n$. Then $x \in \mathcal{F}(n, i)$ if and only if $x^{\prime} \in \mathcal{F}(n-1, i-1)$, where $x^{\prime}=x \backslash\{n\}$.

Proof. For $x \in \mathcal{F}(n, i)$ let $s_{x}^{i}=\left(\alpha_{1}-\beta_{1}\right) \cdots\left(\alpha_{i}-\beta_{i}\right)$ be the standard polytope based on $x$. By definition $s_{x^{\prime}}^{i-1}=\left(\alpha_{1}-\beta_{1}\right) \cdots\left(\alpha_{i-1}-\beta_{i-1}\right)$ is a standard polytope based on $x^{\prime} \in \mathcal{F}(n-1, i-1)$. Vice versa, we observe that, by hypothesis, $n \geq 2$. If $x^{\prime}=\emptyset$, then $x=\{n\}$ and $s_{x}^{1}=(1-n)$ is a standard polytope of type $(1,1)$. If $i>1$ and $x^{\prime} \in \mathcal{F}(n-1, i-1), s_{x^{\prime}}^{i}=\left(\alpha_{1}-\beta_{1}\right) \cdots\left(\alpha_{i-1}-\beta_{i-1}\right)$ is the standard polytope based on $x^{\prime}$. Then $s_{x}^{i}=\left(\alpha_{1}-\beta_{1}\right) \cdots\left(\alpha_{i-1}-\beta_{i-1}\right)\left(\alpha_{i}-n\right)$ is the standard polytope based on $x=\left\{\beta_{1}, \cdots, \beta_{i-1}, n\right\}$, where

$$
\alpha_{i}=\min \left\{\delta: \delta \in \Omega \backslash\left\{\alpha_{1}, \cdots, \alpha_{i-1}, \beta_{1}, \cdots, \beta_{i-1}, n\right\}\right\} .
$$

Lemma 4.5.3. Let $1 \leq i \leq \frac{n-1}{2}$ and $x=\left\{\beta_{1}, \cdots, \beta_{i}\right\} \in L_{i}^{n}$, such that $n \notin x$ and $\beta_{1}<\cdots<\beta_{i}$.

1. $x \in \mathcal{F}(n, i)$ if and only if $x \in \mathcal{F}(n-1, i)$;
2. $\mathcal{F}(n, 0)=\mathcal{F}(n-1,0)$.

Proof. 1. Applying the Definition 4.4.1, the claim follows.
2. $\mathcal{F}(n, 0)=\{\emptyset\}=\mathcal{F}(n-1,0)$.

Step 3. With methods similar to those used in [8] we prove the following
Theorem 4.5.4. Let $0 \leq t \leq k$ with $t+k \leq n$ and $s_{x_{i}}^{i}$ be a standard polytope of type $(i, i)$, for $i=0, \cdots, t$. Then $\mathbb{Z} S_{k, 0}^{n} \oplus \cdots \oplus \mathbb{Z} S_{k, t}^{n}$ is isomorphic to $\mathbb{Z} L_{k}^{n} \cap\left(E_{k, 0} \oplus \cdots \oplus E_{k, t}\right)$.

An isomorphism is given by the map $\varphi_{t}^{(n) k}$ linear extension of the map defined on a standard basis of polytopes by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varphi_{t}^{(n) k}\left(\epsilon_{i}^{(n) k}\left(s_{x_{i}}^{i}\right)\right)=\epsilon_{i}^{(n) k}\left(x_{i}\right) . \tag{4.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Put $d=k-i$ and $\left(s_{x_{i}}^{i}\right)^{+d}$ as in Notation 4.3.11, with $s_{x_{i}}^{i}$ a standard polytope of type $(i, i)$ in $\mathbb{Z} S_{i, i}^{n}$. By equation 4.11 we have that the standard polytope of type ( $k, i$ ) based on $x$ is $\epsilon_{i}^{(n) k}\left(s_{x_{i}}^{i}\right)=\left(s_{x_{i}}^{i}\right)^{+d}$. From Theorem 4.4.9 we deduce that

$$
\left\{\epsilon_{i}^{(n) k}\left(s_{x_{i}}^{i}\right): s_{x_{i}}^{i} \text { is a standard polytope of type }(i, i), i=0, \cdots, t\right\}
$$

is a basis of $\mathbb{Z} S_{k, 0}^{n} \oplus \cdots \oplus \mathbb{Z} S_{k, t}^{n}$. We note that $\epsilon_{i}^{(n) k}\left(x_{i}\right) \in \mathbb{Z} L_{k}^{n} \cap\left(E_{k, 0} \oplus \cdots \oplus E_{k, t}\right)$.
In the following $A_{t}^{(n) k}$ denotes the matrix $\binom{n}{k} \times\binom{ n}{t}$ with the columns indexed by $\epsilon_{i}^{(n) k}\left(x_{i}\right)$, for $i=0, \cdots, t$ and the rows indexed by $y \in L_{k}^{n}$; moreover we rearrange the terms in accord to whether or not they contain $n$.

In order to apply Lemma 2.4.14 to get that $\varphi_{t}^{(n) k}$ is bijective, we must prove that $\operatorname{Im} \varphi_{t}^{(n) k}$ is a pure submodule of $\mathbb{Z} L_{k}^{n}$ of rank $\binom{n}{t}$. For this purpose it is enough to prove that $A_{t}^{(n) k}$ has index 1 and rank $\binom{n}{t}$. This implies that

$$
\left\{\epsilon_{i}^{(n) k}\left(x_{i}\right): s_{x_{i}}^{i} \text { is a standard polytope of type }(i, i), i=0, \cdots, t\right\}
$$

spans a pure submodule of $\mathbb{Z} L_{k}^{n}$ of $\operatorname{rank}\binom{n}{t}$.

We prove the claim by induction on $n+t$.

If $t=0$, obviously $\mathbb{Z} S_{k, 0}^{n}=\mathbb{Z} L_{k}^{n} \cap E_{k, 0}$ and $s_{\emptyset}^{0}=\emptyset$, so $\varphi_{0}^{(n) k}$ is the identity map.
If $n=1$ then we have two possibilities

1. $t=k=0$;
2. $t=0$ and $k=1$,
which are part of previous case.

Instead if $n=2$, the four cases are

1. $t=k=0$;
2. $t=0, k=1$;
3. $t=0, k=2$;
4. $t=k=1$.

In this last case, it is easy to prove the claim. Actually, since the standard polytope of type $(1,1)$ is $(\{1\}-\{2\})$, we have $\epsilon_{0}^{(2) 1}(\emptyset)=\{1\}+\{2\}$ and $\epsilon_{1}^{(2) 1}(\{2\})=\{2\}$. It follows that $A_{1}^{(2) 1}=\left(\begin{array}{ll}1 & 0 \\ 1 & 1\end{array}\right)$ has index 1 and rank 2.

The above observations prove the first step of induction. So we can consider $t>0$ and $n \geq 3$. By induction we suppose that the statement is true for $\bar{n}+\bar{t}<n+t$, i.e. $A_{\bar{t}}^{(\bar{n}) \bar{k}}$ has index 1 and rank $\binom{\bar{n}}{\bar{t}}$, with $0 \leq \bar{t} \leq \bar{k}$ and $\bar{t}+\bar{k} \leq \bar{n}$. In particular
(I) $A_{t}^{(n-1) k}$ has index 1 and rank $\binom{n-1}{t}$, with $0 \leq t \leq k$ and $t+k \leq n-1$,
(II) $A_{t-1}^{(n-1) k-1}$ has index 1 and rank $\binom{n-1}{t-1}$, with $0 \leq t-1 \leq k-1$ and $t-1+k-1 \leq n-1$,
(III) $A_{t}^{(n-1) k-1}$ has index 1 and rank $\binom{n-1}{t}$, with $0 \leq t \leq k-1$ and $t+k-1 \leq n-1$,
(IV) $A_{t-1}^{(n-1) t}$ has index 1 and rank $\binom{n-1}{t-1}$, with $0 \leq t-1 \leq t$ and $t+t-1 \leq n-1$,
(V) $A_{t}^{(n-1) t}$ has index 1 and rank $\binom{n-1}{t}$, with $t \geq 0$ and $t+t \leq n-1$,

We distinguish four cases

## 1. Let $t=k=\frac{n}{2}$.

We index the columns and the rows of $A_{t}^{(n) t}$ in accord to

$$
\left\{\epsilon_{i}^{(n) t}\left(x_{i}\right): n \in x_{i}, i=1, \cdots, t\right\} \cup\left\{\epsilon_{i}^{(n) t}\left(x_{i}\right): n \notin x_{i}, i=0, \cdots, t-1\right\}
$$

and $\left\{y \in L_{t}^{n}: n \in y\right\} \cup\left\{y \in L_{t}^{n}: n \notin y\right\}$, respectively.
Observe that in $\left\{\epsilon_{i}^{(n) t}\left(x_{i}\right): n \notin x_{i}, i=0, \cdots, t-1\right\}$ the index $i$ runs between 0 and $t-1$, since if $s_{x_{t}}^{t}=\left(\alpha_{1}-\beta_{1}\right) \cdots\left(\alpha_{t}-\beta_{t}\right)$ is a standard polytope of type $(t, t)$, then $\beta_{t}=n$; whence $n \in x_{t}$.
If $n \in x_{i}$, then $\epsilon_{i}^{(n) t}\left(x_{i}\right)=\{n\} \epsilon_{i-1}^{(n-1) t-1}\left(x_{i}^{\prime}\right)$, where $x_{i}^{\prime}=x_{i} \backslash\{n\}$, by Lemmas 4.5.2 and 4.5.3 we get

$$
A_{t}^{(n) t}=\left(\begin{array}{c|c}
A_{t-1}^{(n-1) t-1} & * \\
\hline 0 & A_{t-1}^{(n-1) t}
\end{array}\right) .
$$

By induction hypothesis, the square matrices $A_{t-1}^{(n-1) t-1}$, of size $\binom{n-1}{t-1}$, and $A_{t-1}^{(n-1) t}$, of size $\binom{n-1}{t-1}$, have index 1 and rank $\binom{n-1}{t-1}$. Since $n-1=t+t-1$, we have that $\binom{n-1}{t-1}=\binom{n-1}{t}$. So $A_{t}^{(n) t}$ has index 1 and rank $\binom{n-1}{t-1}+\binom{n-1}{t}=\binom{n}{t}$.
2. Let $t=k<\frac{n}{2}$.

Again in this case, we index the columns and the rows of $A_{t}^{(n) t}$ in accord to

$$
\left\{\epsilon_{i}^{(n) t}\left(x_{i}\right): n \in x_{i}, i=1, \cdots, t\right\} \cup\left\{\epsilon_{i}^{(n) t}\left(x_{i}\right): n \notin x_{i}, i=0, \cdots, t\right\}
$$

and $\left\{y \in L_{t}^{n}: n \in y\right\} \cup\left\{y \in L_{t}^{n}: n \notin y\right\}$, respectively. As above, by Lemmas 4.5.2 and 4.5.3 we have

$$
A_{t}^{(n) t}=\left(\begin{array}{c|c}
A_{t-1}^{(n-1) t-1} & * \\
\hline 0 & A_{t}^{(n-1) t}
\end{array}\right) .
$$

By induction hypothesis, the square matrices $A_{t-1}^{(n-1) t-1}$, of size $\binom{n-1}{t-1}$, and $A_{t}^{(n-1) t}$, of size $\binom{n-1}{t}$, have index 1 and rank $\binom{n-1}{t-1}$ and $\binom{n-1}{t}$, respectively. So $A_{t}^{(n) t}$ has index 1 and rank $\binom{n-1}{t-1}+\binom{n-1}{t}=\binom{n}{t}$.
3. Let $t+k=n$ and $t<k$. We index the columns and the rows of $A_{t}^{(n) k}$ in accord to $\left\{\epsilon_{i}^{(n) k}\left(x_{i}\right): n \in x_{i}, i=1, \cdots, t\right\} \cup\left\{\epsilon_{t}^{(n) k}\left(x_{t}\right): n \notin x_{t}\right\} \cup\left\{\epsilon_{i}^{(n) k}\left(x_{i}\right): n \notin x_{i}, i=0, \cdots, t-1\right\}$ and $\left\{y \in L_{k}^{n}: n \in y\right\} \cup\left\{y \in L_{k}^{n}: n \notin y\right\}$, respectively. So we have

$$
A_{t}^{(n) k}=\left(\begin{array}{c|c|c}
A_{t-1}^{(n-1) k-1} & * & A_{t-1}^{(n-1) k-1} \\
\hline 0 & * * & A_{t-1}^{(n-1) k}
\end{array}\right)
$$

So $A_{t}^{(n) k}$ is equivalent to

$$
\left(\begin{array}{c|c|c}
A_{t-1}^{(n-1) k-1} & * & 0 \\
\hline 0 & * * & A_{t-1}^{(n-1) k}
\end{array}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{c|c}
A_{t}^{(n-1) k-1} & 0 \\
\hline 0 & * * \\
\hline & A_{t-1}^{(n-1) k}
\end{array}\right)
$$

By induction hypothesis, the matrix $A_{t-1}^{(n-1) k}$, of size $\binom{n-1}{t-1}$, has index 1 and rank $\binom{n-1}{t-1}$. Thus

$$
\left(\begin{array}{c|c}
A_{t}^{(n-1) k-1} & 0 \\
\hline 0 & * * \\
\hline 0 & A_{t-1}^{(n-1) k}
\end{array}\right) \sim\left(\begin{array}{c|c}
A_{t}^{(n-1) k-1} & 0 \\
\hline 0 & * * \\
\hline
\end{array}\right) \sim\left(\begin{array}{c|c}
A_{t}^{(n-1) k-1} & 0 \\
\hline 0 & I
\end{array}\right)
$$

where $I$ is the identity matrix of size $\binom{n-1}{t-1}$. By induction hypothesis, the matrix $A_{t}^{(n-1) k-1}$, of size $\binom{n-1}{t}$, has index 1 and rank $\binom{n-1}{t}$. As $\binom{n-1}{t-1}+\binom{n-1}{t}=\binom{n}{t}$, the claim follows.
4. Let $t+k<n$ and $t<k$. In this case we index the columns and the rows of $A_{t}^{(n) k}$ in accord to

$$
\left\{\epsilon_{i}^{(n) k}\left(x_{i}\right): n \in x_{i}, i=1, \cdots, t\right\} \cup\left\{\epsilon_{i}^{(n) k}\left(x_{i}\right): n \notin x_{i}, i=0, \cdots, t\right\}
$$

and $\left\{y \in L_{k}^{n}: n \in y\right\} \cup\left\{y \in L_{k}^{n}: n \notin y\right\}$, respectively. So we have

$$
A_{t}^{(n) k}=\left(\begin{array}{c|c}
A_{t-1}^{(n-1) k-1} & * \\
\hline 0 & A_{t}^{(n-1) k}
\end{array}\right)
$$

and by induction hypothesis, the matrices $A_{t-1}^{(n-1) k-1}$ and $A_{t}^{(n-1) k}$ have index 1 and rank $\binom{n-1}{t-1}$ and $\binom{n-1}{t}$, respectively. We have the thesis.

Corollary 4.5.5. Let $0 \leq t \leq k \leq n$ with $t+k \leq n$ and $s_{x_{i}}^{i}$ be a standard polytope of type $(i, i)$, for $i=0, \cdots, t$. Then the map

$$
\varphi: \mathbb{Z} S_{k}^{n} / \epsilon_{t}^{k}\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t}^{n}\right) \rightarrow \mathbb{Z} L_{k}^{n} / \epsilon_{t}^{k}\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n}\right)
$$

defined by

$$
\varphi\left(\epsilon_{i}^{k}\left(s_{x_{i}}^{i}\right)+\epsilon_{t}^{k}\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t}^{n}\right)\right)=\epsilon_{i}^{k}\left(x_{i}\right)+\epsilon_{t}^{k}\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n}\right)
$$

and extended by linearity, is an isomorphism.

Proof. By Theorem 4.5.4, we have that $\varphi_{t}^{(n) k}$ is an isomorphism. Hence

$$
\left\{\epsilon_{i}^{k}\left(x_{i}\right): s_{x_{i}}^{i} \text { is a standard polytope of type }(i, i), i=0, \cdots, t\right\}
$$

forms a basis of $\mathbb{Z} L_{k}^{n} \cap\left(E_{k 0} \oplus \cdots \oplus E_{k t}\right)$. In particular

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\{\epsilon_{i}^{k}\left(x_{i}\right): s_{x_{i}}^{i} \text { is a standard polytope of type }(i, i), i=0, \cdots, k^{\prime}\right\} \tag{4.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\{\epsilon_{i}^{t}\left(x_{i}\right): s_{x_{i}}^{i} \text { is a standard polytope of type }(i, i), i=0, \cdots, t\right\} \tag{4.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

are bases of $\mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n}$ and $\mathbb{Z} L_{k}^{n}$ respectively.

Clearly the claim is true if $t=k$, so we take $t<k$. By equation 4.6 we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
\binom{k-i}{t-i} \epsilon_{i}^{k}=\epsilon_{t}^{k} \epsilon_{i}^{t} . \tag{4.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

The relations 4.20, 4.21 and 4.22 together with Theorem 4.5.1 give us

$$
\mathbb{Z} L_{k}^{n} / \epsilon_{t}^{k}\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n}\right) \cong \mathbb{Z} S_{k}^{n} / \epsilon_{t}^{k}\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t}^{n}\right) \cong\left(C_{d_{0}}\right)^{n_{0}} \times \cdots \times\left(C_{d_{t}}\right)^{n_{t}} \times \mathbb{Z}^{l}
$$

with $l=\binom{n}{k}-\binom{n}{t}, d_{i}=\binom{k-i}{t-i}$ and $n_{i}=\binom{n}{i}-\binom{n}{i-1}$.

## CHAPTER 5

## $G$-modules and orbit matrices

In this section we consider a generic permutation group $G \subseteq \operatorname{Sym}(n), n=|\Omega|$, with the induced action over $L^{n}$. If $R$ is one of $\mathbb{Q}$ or $\mathbb{Z}$ we define the "orbit module" of $G$ in the following way

Definition 5.0.1. Let $M$ be a submodule of $R L_{i}^{n}$. Then the "orbit module" of $G$ on $M$, denoted by $M^{G}$, is the centralizer algebra

$$
M^{G}:=\left\{v \in M: v^{g}=v \text { for any } g \in G\right\} .
$$

Since the action of $G$ on $\mathbb{Q} L^{n}$ commutes with $\epsilon$, we have the following restrictions

$$
\begin{equation*}
\epsilon_{t}^{k}:\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n}\right)^{G} \rightarrow\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{k}^{n}\right)^{G} \tag{5.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\epsilon_{t}^{k}:\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t}^{n}\right)^{G} \rightarrow\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{k}^{n}\right)^{G} . \tag{5.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

$S_{t}^{n}=S_{t, 0}^{n} \cup S_{t, 1}^{n} \cup \cdots \cup S_{t, t^{\prime}}^{n}$, denotes the set of polytopes. As $G$ maps polytopes of type $(t, i)$ in polytopes of the same type, it is immediate to recognize:

$$
\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t}^{n}\right)^{G}=\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t, 0}^{n}\right)^{G} \oplus \cdots \oplus\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t, t^{\prime}}^{n}\right)^{G} .
$$

We are interested to Smith groups of the restrictions of $\epsilon_{t}^{k}$ to the orbit modules of $G$ on $\mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n}$ and $\mathbb{Z} S_{t}^{n}$.

If $G=\left\{1_{G}\right\}$ then the orbits on $L_{t}^{n}$ correspond to the subsets. So $\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n}\right)^{G}=\mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n}$ and $\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t}^{n}\right)^{G}=\mathbb{Z} S_{t}^{n}$. Hence we can see the problem to find the Smith group of

$$
\epsilon_{t}^{k}:\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n}\right)^{G} \rightarrow\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{k}^{n}\right)^{G}
$$

as a generalization of Wilson's Theorem, 3.1.6 and 4.5.5.

The main original result of this chapter is Theorem 5.1.7 where we obtain the Smith group of $\epsilon_{t}^{k}:\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t}^{n}\right)^{G} \rightarrow\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{k}^{n}\right)^{G}$. This generalizes Theorem 4.5.1. Moreover in sections 5.2 and 5.3 we give some ideas which lead to conjecture that if $t+k=n$, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{k}^{n}\right)^{G} / \epsilon_{t}^{k}\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n}\right)^{G} \cong\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{k}^{n}\right)^{G} / \epsilon_{t}^{k}\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t}^{n}\right)^{G} . \tag{5.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

The conjecture will be formally stated in 5.3.5.

Finally in section 5.4, we consider the orbits $\Delta_{1}, \cdots, \Delta_{\tau_{t}}$ of $G$ over the $t$-subsets $L_{t}^{n}$ and the orbits $\Gamma_{1}, \cdots, \Gamma_{\tau_{k}}$ of $G$ over the $k$-subsets $L_{k}^{n}$. Denote by $\Omega^{t}$ the orbit set $\left\{\Delta_{1}, \cdots, \Delta_{\tau_{t}}\right\}$ and by $\Omega^{k}$ the orbit set $\left\{\Gamma_{1}, \cdots, \Gamma_{\tau_{k}}\right\}$.

It is not difficult to recognize that the incidence matrices $X_{t k}^{+}$and $X_{t k}^{-}$, denoted by $G$ orbits matrices, of the tactical decomposition $\left(\Omega^{t}, \Omega^{k}\right)$ of $I_{t k}^{n}=\left(L_{t}^{n}, L_{k}^{n} ; \subseteq\right)$ are actually the matrices of

$$
\epsilon_{t}^{k}:\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n}\right)^{G} \rightarrow\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{k}^{n}\right)^{G} \quad \text { and } \quad \partial_{k}^{t}:\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{k}^{n}\right)^{G} \rightarrow\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n}\right)^{G}
$$

with respect to the canonical bases (see Corollary 5.1.6)

$$
\mathcal{B}_{\Omega^{t}}=\left\{\sum_{x \in \Delta_{j}} x: j=1, \cdots, \tau_{t}\right\} \quad \text { and } \quad \mathcal{B}_{\Omega^{k}}=\left\{\sum_{y \in \Gamma_{i}} y: i=1, \cdots, \tau_{k}\right\} .
$$

So again for $G=\left\{1_{G}\right\}, X_{t k}^{+}$and $X_{t k}^{-}$coincide with the matrices $W_{t k}^{T}$ and $W_{t k}$.

To look for a diagonal form of $X_{t k}^{+}$is equivalent to determine the Smith group of $\epsilon_{t}^{k}:\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n}\right)^{G} \rightarrow\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{k}^{n}\right)^{G}$.

We give some results about the matrices $X_{t k}^{+}$and $X_{t k}^{-}$in the case $t+k=n$, reinforcing our conjecture (see 5.3.5).

As usual, when there is not confusion, we write $\left(\mathbb{Q} L_{t}\right)^{G},\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}\right)^{G},\left(\mathbb{Q} S_{t}\right)^{G},\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t, i}\right)^{G}$ instead $\left(\mathbb{Q} L_{t}^{n}\right)^{G},\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n}\right)^{G},\left(\mathbb{Q} S_{t}^{n}\right)^{G},\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t, i}^{n}\right)^{G}$.

## 5.1 $G$-orbit decomposition

The Smith group of $\epsilon_{t}^{k}:\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t}\right)^{G} \rightarrow\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{k}\right)^{G}$ will be determined in Theorem 5.1.7. To achieve the result we need some preliminary theorems, which make use of the concept of pure module.

Theorem 5.1.1. For each $0 \leq t \leq n$, denote by $\Delta_{1}, \cdots, \Delta_{\tau_{t}}$ the orbits of $G$ over $L_{t}^{n}$. Then the set $\Omega^{t}$ is a generating set for the vector space $\left(\mathbb{Q} L_{t}\right)^{G}$, that is

$$
\left(\mathbb{Q} L_{t}\right)^{G}=\operatorname{span}_{\mathbb{Q}}\left\{\sum_{x \in \Delta_{j}} x: \Delta_{j} \in \Omega^{t} \text { and } j=0, \cdots, \tau_{t}\right\} .
$$

Proof. For any $g \in G$ and $j=0, \cdots, \tau_{t}$

$$
\left(\sum_{x \in \Delta_{j}} x\right)^{g}=\sum_{x \in \Delta_{j}} x^{g}=\sum_{x \in \Delta_{j}} x .
$$

Hence $\operatorname{span}_{\mathbb{Q}}\left\{\sum_{x \in \Delta_{j}} x: \Delta_{j} \in \Omega^{t}\right.$ and $\left.j=0, \cdots, \tau_{t}\right\} \subseteq\left(\mathbb{Q} L_{t}\right)^{G}$.
Conversely, let $f \in\left(\mathbb{Q} L_{t}\right)^{G}$, we can write

$$
f=\sum_{x \in L_{t}^{n}} r_{x} x=\sum_{x_{1} \in \Delta_{1}} r_{x_{1}} x_{1}+\cdots+\sum_{x_{\tau_{t}} \in \Delta_{\tau_{t}}} r_{x_{\tau_{t}}} x_{\tau_{t}} .
$$

By hypothesis, $f^{g}=f$ for all $g \in G$, so

$$
\sum_{x_{1} \in \Delta_{1}} r_{x_{1}} x_{1}^{g}+\cdots+\sum_{x_{\tau_{t}} \in \Delta_{\tau_{t}}} r_{x_{\tau_{t}}} x_{\tau_{t}}^{g}=\sum_{x_{1} \in \Delta_{1}} r_{x_{1}} x_{1}+\cdots+\sum_{x_{\tau_{t}} \in \Delta_{\tau_{t}}} r_{x_{\tau_{t}}} x_{\tau_{t}} .
$$

We deduce that $r_{x_{j}}$ depends only from the orbit. Thus

$$
f=r_{1} \sum_{x_{1} \in \Delta_{1}} x_{1}+\cdots+r_{\tau_{t}} \sum_{x_{\tau_{t}} \in \Delta_{\tau_{t}}} x_{\tau_{t}} .
$$

The statement follows. In particular, we get that $\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}}\left(\mathbb{Q} L_{t}\right)^{G}=\tau_{t}$.

Following some ideas of [13] and previous section we get Theorem 5.1.2.
Theorem 5.1.2. Put $G \subseteq \operatorname{Sym}(n)$ and $t \leq k \leq n$, with $t+k \leq n$. Then

$$
\left(\mathbb{Q} S_{t, i}\right)^{G} \cong\left(\mathbb{Q} S_{k, i}\right)^{G}
$$

for all $0 \leq i \leq t$. Actually, the tail-cutting and tail-extension maps restrict to $G$ isomorphisms between the two G-orbit vector spaces and are inverse to each other.

Proof. First we consider $i=0$. The polytope $\sum_{x \in L_{t}^{n}} x$ of type $(t, 0)$ belongs to $\left(\mathbb{Q} S_{t, 0}\right)^{G}$. So $E_{t, 0}=\operatorname{span}_{\mathbb{Q}}\left(\sum_{x \in L_{t}^{n}} x\right)=\left(\mathbb{Q} S_{t, 0}\right)^{G}$. The claim follows since that $E_{k, 0} \cong E_{t, 0}$.

For $0 \leq i \leq t$, we saw in Corollary 4.3.10 that the map tail-cutting $-: E_{t+1, i} \rightarrow E_{t, i}$ is a $\mathbb{Q} \operatorname{Sym}(n)$-isomorphism, so also a $\mathbb{Q} G$-isomorphism. It follows that for $f \in\left(\mathbb{Q} S_{t+1, i}\right)^{G}$, $\left(f^{-}\right)^{g}=\left(f^{g}\right)^{-}=f^{-}$, so that $f^{-} \in\left(\mathbb{Q} L_{t}\right)^{G} \cap E_{t, i}=\left(\mathbb{Q} S_{t, i}\right)^{G}$.

Similarly, the map $+: E_{t, i} \rightarrow E_{t+1, i}$ restricts to the map $+:\left(\mathbb{Q} S_{t, i}\right)^{G} \rightarrow\left(\mathbb{Q} S_{t+1, i}\right)^{G}$. Whence $\left(\mathbb{Q} S_{t, i}\right)^{G} \cong\left(\mathbb{Q} S_{t+1, i}\right)^{G}$. The maps + and - are inverse to each other.

Theorem 5.1.3. [13] Let $0 \leq t \leq n$, then

$$
\left(\mathbb{Q} L_{t}\right)^{G}=\left(\mathbb{Q} S_{t, 0}\right)^{G} \oplus \cdots \oplus\left(\mathbb{Q} S_{t, t^{\prime}}\right)^{G} .
$$

In particular, $\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}}\left(\mathbb{Q} S_{t, i}\right)^{G}=\tau_{i}-\tau_{i-1}$.

Proof. We observe that $\left(\mathbb{Q} S_{t, 0}\right)^{G} \oplus \cdots \oplus\left(\mathbb{Q} S_{t, t^{\prime}}\right)^{G} \subseteq\left(\mathbb{Q} L_{t}\right)^{G}$.

Let now $f$ be an element of $\left(\mathbb{Q} L_{t}\right)^{G}$, that is $f^{g}=f$ for any $g \in G$. We have $\left(\mathbb{Q} L_{t}\right)^{G} \subseteq$ $\mathbb{Q} L_{t}=E_{t, 0} \oplus \cdots \oplus E_{t, t^{\prime}}$ and $E_{t, i}$ are $G$-invariant subspaces of $\mathbb{Q} L_{t}^{n}$. So, we write

$$
f=f_{t, 0}+\cdots+f_{t, t^{\prime}}=f_{t, 0}^{g}+\cdots+f_{t, t^{\prime}}^{g}
$$

where $f_{t, i} \in E_{t, i}$. As $f^{g}=f$ and $f_{t, i}^{g} \in E_{t, i}$, we get $f_{t, i}^{g}=f_{t, i}$ by the uniqueness of writing. This proves $\left(\mathbb{Q} L_{t}\right)^{G} \subseteq\left(\mathbb{Q} S_{t, 0}\right)^{G} \oplus \cdots \oplus\left(\mathbb{Q} S_{t, t^{\prime}}\right)^{G}$. So the equality holds.

Now, we argue on the dimension and we prove by induction that $\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}}\left(\mathbb{Q} S_{i, i}\right)^{G}=\tau_{i}-\tau_{i-1}$, for $0 \leq i \leq \frac{n}{2}$.

If $i=0$, then $\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}}\left(\mathbb{Q} S_{0,0}\right)^{G}=\tau_{0}=1$. Now we assume that

$$
\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}}\left(\mathbb{Q} S_{j, j}\right)^{G}=\tau_{j}-\tau_{j-1}
$$

for any $j<i$. By Theorem 5.1.2, we have $\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}}\left(\mathbb{Q} S_{i, j}\right)^{G}=\tau_{j}-\tau_{j-1}$. Since

$$
\left(\mathbb{Q} L_{i}\right)^{G}=\left(\mathbb{Q} S_{i, 0}\right)^{G} \oplus\left(\mathbb{Q} S_{i, 1}\right)^{G} \oplus \cdots \oplus\left(\mathbb{Q} S_{i, i-1}\right)^{G} \oplus\left(\mathbb{Q} S_{i, i}\right)^{G},
$$

we have
$\tau_{i}=\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}}\left(\mathbb{Q} L_{i}\right)^{G}=\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}}\left(\mathbb{Q} S_{i, 0}\right)^{G} \oplus \operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}}\left(\mathbb{Q} S_{i, 1}\right)^{G} \oplus \cdots \oplus \operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}}\left(\mathbb{Q} S_{i, i-1}\right)^{G} \oplus \operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}}\left(\mathbb{Q} S_{i, i}\right)^{G}$ and by induction hypothesis, we get

$$
\tau_{i}=\tau_{0}+\tau_{1}-\tau_{0}+\cdots+\tau_{i-1}-\tau_{i-2}+\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}}\left(\mathbb{Q} S_{i, i}\right)^{G} .
$$

Thus

$$
\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}}\left(\mathbb{Q} S_{i, i}\right)^{G}=\tau_{i}-\tau_{i-1} .
$$

Applying again Theorem 5.1.2 we get $\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{Q}}\left(\mathbb{Q} S_{t, i}\right)^{G}=\tau_{i}-\tau_{i-1}$, for $0 \leq i \leq t^{\prime}$.

Now we examine the $\mathbb{Z}$-module $\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}\right)^{G}$.

Proposition 5.1.4. Let $0 \leq t \leq n$, then $\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}\right)^{G}$ is a pure submodule of $\mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n}$.

Proof. As usual we just prove that $\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}\right)^{G} \cap a \mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n} \subseteq a\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}\right)^{G}$, for any $a \in \mathbb{Z} \backslash\{0\}$. If $v \in\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}\right)^{G} \cap a \mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n}$ then $v=a w$, with $w \in \mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n}$. Since $v^{g}=v$, for any $g \in G$, we have that $a\left(w^{g}-w\right)=0$. As $\mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n}$ is torsion-free, we get $w \in\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}\right)^{G}$. The claim follows.

We use the previous result to get the analogue of Theorem 5.1.1 for the $\mathbb{Z}$-module $\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}\right)^{G}$.
Proposition 5.1.5. Let $0 \leq t \leq n$ and $\Omega^{t}=\left\{\Delta_{1}, \cdots, \Delta_{\tau_{t}}\right\}$. Then

$$
\operatorname{span}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left\{\sum_{x \in \Delta_{j}} x: j=1, \cdots, \tau_{t}\right\}
$$

is a pure submodule of $\mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n}$ of rank $\tau_{t}$.

Proof. Let $a \in \mathbb{Z} \backslash\{0\}$ and $v \in \operatorname{span}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left\{\sum_{x \in \Delta_{j}} x: j=1, \cdots, \tau_{t}\right\} \cap a \mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n}$, then there exists $w \in \mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n}$ such that $v=a w$. But $v=\sum_{j=1}^{\tau_{t}} r_{j} \sum_{x \in \Delta_{j}} x$ and $w=\sum_{j=1}^{\tau_{t}} \sum_{x \in \Delta_{j}} s_{x} x$, for some $r_{j}$ and $s_{x}$ in $\mathbb{Z}$. As $L_{t}^{n}$ is a basis of $\mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n}$ and $\sum_{j=1}^{\tau_{t}} r_{j} \sum_{x \in \Delta_{j}} x=\sum_{j=1}^{\tau_{t}} \sum_{x \in \Delta_{j}} a s_{x} x$, we get $r_{j}=a s_{x}$, for any $x \in \Delta_{j}$ and $j=1, \cdots, \tau_{t}$. So $w \in \operatorname{span}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left\{\sum_{x \in \Delta_{j}} x: j=1, \cdots, \tau_{t}\right\}$.

Corollary 5.1.6. Let $0 \leq t \leq n$ and $\Omega^{t}=\left\{\Delta_{1}, \cdots, \Delta_{\tau_{t}}\right\}$. Then

$$
\left.\operatorname{span}_{\mathbb{Z}\{ } \sum_{x \in \Delta_{j}} x: j=1, \cdots, \tau_{t}\right\}=\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}\right)^{G}
$$

and its rank is $\tau_{t}$.

Proof. As $\operatorname{span} \mathbb{Z}\left\{\sum_{x \in \Delta_{j}} x: j=1, \cdots, \tau_{t}\right\} \subseteq\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}\right)^{G}$, then $\operatorname{rank}\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}\right)^{G} \geq \tau_{t}$. Since $\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}\right)^{G} \subseteq\left(\mathbb{Q} L_{t}\right)^{G}$, it follows that $\operatorname{rank}\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}\right)^{G}=\tau_{t}$; applying the Lemma 2.4.14, we get the claim.

In the next Theorem we find the Smith group of $\epsilon_{t}^{k}:\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t}\right)^{G} \rightarrow\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{k}\right)^{G}$, which is our main result of this section. As usual, we put $d=k-t$ and $s_{t i j}^{+d}$ the polytope of type ( $k, i$ ) obtained from $s_{t i j}$ by $d$-fold tail extension.

Theorem 5.1.7. Let $0 \leq t \leq k$ and $t+k \leq n$. Then the Smith group of

$$
\epsilon_{t}^{k}:\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t}\right)^{G} \rightarrow\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{k}\right)^{G}
$$

is isomorphic to

$$
\left(C_{d_{0}}\right)^{m_{0}} \times\left(C_{d_{1}}\right)^{m_{1}} \times \cdots \times\left(C_{d_{t}}\right)^{m_{t}} \times \mathbb{Z}^{l}
$$

where $d_{i}=\binom{k-i}{t-i}, m_{i}=\tau_{i}-\tau_{i-1}, i=0, \cdots, t$ and $l=\tau_{k}-\tau_{t}$.

Proof. The claim is trivial if $k=t$, since $\epsilon_{t}^{k}$ is the identity map. So we consider $t \neq k$ and $t+k \leq n$. Select some $0 \leq i \leq t$ and let $C_{t i}=\left\{c_{t i 1}, \cdots, c_{t i m_{i}}\right\}$ be a basis of $\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t, i}\right)^{G}$. Take $\left\{s_{t i l}, \cdots, s_{t n_{i}}\right\}$ a basis of polytopes of $\mathbb{Z} S_{t, i}^{n}$, then there exist $a_{i l l}, \cdots, a_{i l n_{i}} \in \mathbb{Z}$ such that $c_{t i l}=\sum_{j=1}^{n_{i}} a_{i l j} s_{t i j}$, with $1 \leq l \leq m_{i}$. Thus

$$
\epsilon_{t}^{k}\left(c_{t i l}\right)=\epsilon_{t}^{k}\left(\sum_{j=1}^{n_{i}} a_{i l j} s_{t i j}\right)=\binom{k-i}{t-i} \sum_{j=1}^{n_{i}} a_{i l j} s_{t i j}^{+d} .
$$

It is easy to prove that the maps tail-extension and tail-cutting restrict to the isomorphisms

$$
+:\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t, i}\right)^{G} \rightarrow\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t+1, i}\right)^{G} \text { and }-:\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t+1, i}\right)^{G} \rightarrow\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t, i}\right)^{G},
$$

since $+\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t, i}\right)^{G} \subseteq\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t+1, i}\right)^{G},-\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t+1, i}\right)^{G} \subseteq\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t, i}\right)^{G}$ and they are inverse to each other.
So the set $C_{t i}^{+d}=\left\{\left(c_{t i 1}\right)^{+d}, \cdots,\left(c_{t i m_{i}}\right)^{+d}\right\}$, obtained from $C_{t i}$ applying $d$-times tailextension map, is a basis of $\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{k, i}\right)^{G}$. It follows $\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{k, i}\right)^{G} / \epsilon_{t}^{k}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t, i}\right)^{G}\right) \cong\left(C_{d_{i}}\right)^{m_{i}}$, with $d_{i}=\binom{k-i}{t-i}$ and $m_{i}=\tau_{i}-\tau_{i-1}$.

It follows that

$$
\frac{\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{k}\right)^{G}}{\epsilon_{t}^{k}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t}\right)^{G}\right)} \cong\left(C_{d_{0}}\right)^{m_{0}} \times \cdots \times\left(C_{d_{t}}\right)^{m_{t}} \times \mathbb{Z}^{l}
$$

where $l=\tau_{k}-\tau_{t}$.

Example 5.1.8. Let $n=6, t=1, k=2$ and $G=\langle(1,2,3),(1,2)(4,5)\rangle$. Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(\mathbb{Z} S_{2}\right)^{G} / \epsilon_{1}^{2}\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{1}\right)^{G} \cong C_{2} \times \mathbb{Z}^{2} . \\
& \left(\mathbb{Z} S_{1}\right)^{G}=\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{1,0}\right)^{G} \oplus\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{1,1}\right)^{G}
\end{aligned}
$$

and

$$
\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{2}\right)^{G}=\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{2,0}\right)^{G} \oplus\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{2,1}\right)^{G} \oplus\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{2,2}\right)^{G} .
$$

As usual, for avoid confusion, we denote the set $\Omega$ by $\left\{\alpha_{1}, \alpha_{2}, \cdots, \alpha_{6}\right\}$ instead $\{1,2, \cdots, 6\}$.
The $G$-orbits on $L_{1}^{6}$ are $\Lambda_{1}=\left\{\alpha_{1}, \alpha_{2}, \alpha_{3}\right\}, \Lambda_{2}=\left\{\alpha_{4}, \alpha_{5}\right\}, \Lambda_{3}=\left\{\alpha_{6}\right\}$, while those on $L_{2}^{6}$ are

$$
\begin{gathered}
\Delta_{1}=\{\{1,2\},\{2,3\},\{1,3\}\}, \Delta_{2}=\{\{1,4\},\{2.4\},\{2,5\},\{3,4\},\{1,5\},\{3,5\}\}, \\
\Delta_{3}=\{\{1,6\},\{2,6\},\{3,6\}\}, \Delta_{4}=\{\{5,6\},\{4,6\}\}, \Delta_{5}=\{\{4,5\}\} .
\end{gathered}
$$

We want to find a basis of $\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{1}\right)^{G}$. For this purpose we give a $\mathbb{Z}$-basis of $\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{1,0}\right)^{G}$ and of $\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{1,1}\right)^{G}$.

1. The module $\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{1,0}\right)^{G}$ is spanned by $\epsilon_{0}^{1}(\emptyset)=\sum_{x \in L_{1}^{6}} x$.
2. To find a generating set of $\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{1,1}\right)^{G}$ we consider the standard basis of polytopes of type $(1,1)$ :

$$
\left\{\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{2}\right),\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{3}\right),\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{4}\right),\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{5}\right),\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{6}\right)\right\}
$$

It is easy to see that the elements $v=\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{4}\right)+\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{5}\right)-2\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{6}\right)$ and $w=$ $\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{2}\right)+\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{3}\right)-3\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{6}\right)$ are fixed by every $g \in G$. So they are in $\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{1,1}\right)^{G}$. On the other hand they are linearly independent and span a pure submodule of $\mathbb{Z} S_{1,1}$. To see this, put $N=\operatorname{span}_{\mathbb{Z}}\{v, w\}$ and prove that for any non-zero integer $a, N \cap a \mathbb{Z} S_{1,1} \subseteq a N$. Let $u \in N \cap a \mathbb{Z} S_{1,1}$. Then $u=b_{1} v+b_{2} w=a \sum_{i=2}^{6} a_{i}\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{i}\right)$, for some $b_{1}, b_{2}, a_{i} \in \mathbb{Z}$. Whence a divides $b_{1}$ and $b_{2}$. It follows that $u \in a N$.

Since $\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{1,1}\right)^{G}$ has rank $\tau_{1}-\tau_{0}=2$, by Lemma 2.4.14 we have

$$
\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{1,1}\right)^{G}=\operatorname{span}_{\mathbb{Z}}\{v, w\} .
$$

Now we consider the module $\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{2}\right)^{G}$. The element $\epsilon_{0}^{2}(\emptyset)=\sum_{x \in L_{2}^{6}} x=\frac{1}{2} \epsilon_{1}^{2}\left(\sum_{x \in L_{1}^{6}} x\right)$ is a basis of $\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{2,0}\right)^{G}$. Moreover $\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{2,1}\right)^{G}=\epsilon_{1}^{2}\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{1,1}\right)^{G}$. Remembering Theorem 2.3.8 and Corollary 2.3.9, by direct computation we get

$$
\frac{\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{2}\right)^{G}}{\epsilon_{1}^{2}\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{1}\right)^{G}} \cong C_{2} \times \mathbb{Z}^{2}
$$

### 5.2 The case $t+k=n$

Here we assume $t+k=n$ and we prove that the Smith groups of

$$
\epsilon_{t}^{k}:\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}\right)^{G} \rightarrow\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{k}\right)^{G}
$$

and

$$
\epsilon_{t}^{k}:\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t}\right)^{G} \rightarrow\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{k}\right)^{G}
$$

have the same order (see Theorem 5.2.5).
In chapter 4 we defined the maps + and - between $\mathbb{Q} L_{t}^{n}$ and $\mathbb{Q} L_{t+1}^{n}$. Applying them $d$-times ( $d=k-t$ ) we got two isomorphisms between $\mathbb{Q} L_{t}^{n}$ and $\mathbb{Q} L_{k}^{n}$, which we called $+d$ and $-d$. We notice that they do not restrict to isomorphisms between $\mathbb{Z}$-modules $\mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n}$ and $\mathbb{Z} L_{k}^{n}$. We clarify this concept with an example.

Example 5.2.1. Let $\Omega=\{1,2,3,4,5,6\}, t=2$ and $k=4$. For avoid confusion, we denote by $\alpha_{i}$ the $i^{\text {th }}$-element of $\Omega$. We do the calculation using Magma Computational Algebra System (see Appendix B). Taken

$$
v=-\alpha_{1} \alpha_{2}-\alpha_{1} \alpha_{4}+\alpha_{2} \alpha_{4}+2 \alpha_{2} \alpha_{5}+\alpha_{1} \alpha_{6}+\alpha_{4} \alpha_{6} \in \mathbb{Z} L_{2}^{6}
$$

we get $v^{+2}=-\frac{1}{2} \alpha_{3} \alpha_{4} \alpha_{5} \alpha_{6}+\frac{3}{2} \alpha_{2} \alpha_{4} \alpha_{5} \alpha_{6}+\frac{1}{2} \alpha_{1} \alpha_{3} \alpha_{5} \alpha_{6}+\alpha_{1} \alpha_{3} \alpha_{4} \alpha_{6}+\frac{1}{2} \alpha_{1} \alpha_{2} \alpha_{5} \alpha_{6}+$ $\frac{1}{2} \alpha_{2} \alpha_{3} \alpha_{4} \alpha_{6}+\frac{3}{2} \alpha_{2} \alpha_{3} \alpha_{4} \alpha_{5}-\alpha_{1} \alpha_{3} \alpha_{4} \alpha_{5}-\alpha_{1} \alpha_{2} \alpha_{3} \alpha_{4}+\frac{1}{2} \alpha_{1} \alpha_{2} \alpha_{3} \alpha_{5}-\frac{1}{2} \alpha_{1} \alpha_{2} \alpha_{3} \alpha_{6} \notin \mathbb{Z} L_{4}^{6}$

In order to argue on the order of $\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{k}\right)^{G} / \epsilon_{t}^{k}\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}\right)^{G}$ we need to define a new map between $\mathbb{Q} L_{t}^{n}$ and $\mathbb{Q} L_{k}^{n}$ (and conversely), which restrict to $\mathbb{Z}$-isomorpshim.

We define the new tail-extension $+_{N}: \mathbb{Q} L_{t}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{Q} L_{k}^{n}$ in the following way.
We consider the canonical bases $L_{t}^{n}$ and $L_{k}^{n}$ of $\mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n}$ and $\mathbb{Z} L_{k}^{n}$, respectively. For $x \in L_{t}^{n}$, denote by $\bar{x}$ the complement of $x$ in $\Omega$. We put $x^{+N}=\bar{x}$ and we extend linearly.

Similarly, we define the new tail-cutting $-_{N}: \mathbb{Q} L_{k}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{Q} L_{t}^{n}$ such that $y^{-N}=\bar{y}$.

Summarizing,

$$
+_{N}:\left\{\begin{array}{clc}
\mathbb{Q} L_{t}^{n} & \rightarrow \mathbb{Q} L_{k}^{n} \\
x & \rightarrow & \bar{x}
\end{array} \quad-{ }_{N}:\left\{\begin{array}{ccc}
\mathbb{Q} L_{k}^{n} & \rightarrow \mathbb{Q} L_{t}^{n} \\
y & \rightarrow & \bar{y}
\end{array}\right.\right.
$$

In the next Theorem we prove that $s_{t, i}^{+N}=(-1)^{i} s_{t, i}^{+d}$, where $d=n-2 t$ and $s_{t, i}$ is a polytope of type $(t, i)$, for $i=0, \cdots, t$.

Theorem 5.2.2. Let $0 \leq t \leq k \leq n$ with $t+k=n$. Then for every polytopes $s_{t, i}$ of type $(t, i)$, we have $s_{t, i}^{+N}=(-1)^{i} s_{t, i}^{+d}$, where $d=n-2 t$.

Proof. Let $s_{t, i}=\left(\alpha_{1}-\beta_{1}\right) \cdots\left(\alpha_{i}-\beta_{i}\right)\left(\gamma_{1}+\cdots+\gamma_{u}\right)$ be a polytope of type $(t, i)$. Then

$$
s_{t, i}^{+d}=\left(\alpha_{1}-\beta_{1}\right) \cdots\left(\alpha_{i}-\beta_{i}\right)\left(\gamma_{1}^{\prime}+\cdots+\gamma_{u}^{\prime}\right),
$$

where $\gamma_{j}^{\prime}$ is the complement of $\gamma_{j}$ in $\Omega \backslash\left\{\alpha_{1}, \cdots, \alpha_{i}, \beta_{1}, \cdots, \beta_{i}\right\}$, for $j=0, \cdots, u$.

If $i=0$ the statement is trivial. We assume $i>0$. Let $x$ be a $t$-set such that it appears in $s_{t, i}$ and let $y=\bar{x}$ be the complement of $x$ in $\Omega$. Note that $\gamma_{j} \subseteq x$ if and only if $\gamma_{j}^{\prime} \subseteq y$,
for $j=0, \cdots, u$ and $\alpha_{r} \in x$ if and only if $\beta_{r} \in y$, for $0 \leq r \leq i$ (conversely $\beta_{r} \in x$ if and only if $\alpha_{r} \in y$ ). For example, if $x=\left\{\alpha_{1}, \cdots, \alpha_{i}\right\} \cup \gamma_{1}$, then $y=\left\{\beta_{1}, \cdots, \beta_{i}\right\} \cup \gamma_{1}^{\prime}$.

The image $s_{t, i}^{+N}$ is obtained from $s_{t, i}$ by substitution of every $\alpha_{r}$ with $\beta_{r}$ and $\gamma_{j}$ with $\gamma_{j}^{\prime}$. Whence

$$
\begin{aligned}
s_{t, i}^{+_{N}} & =\left(\beta_{1}-\alpha_{1}\right) \cdots\left(\beta_{i}-\alpha_{i}\right)\left(\gamma_{1}^{\prime}+\cdots+\gamma_{u}^{\prime}\right) \\
& =(-1)^{i}\left(\alpha_{1}-\beta_{1}\right) \cdots\left(\alpha_{i}-\beta_{i}\right)\left(\gamma_{1}^{\prime}+\cdots+\gamma_{u}^{\prime}\right) \\
& =(-1)^{i} s_{t, i}^{+d}
\end{aligned}
$$

This Theorem justifies the symbols $+_{N}$ and $-_{N}$ used to indicate these maps, which we call new tail-extension and new tail-cutting.

Example 5.2.3. If $n=6, t=2, k=4$ and $s_{2,1}=\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{3}\right)\left(\alpha_{2}+\alpha_{4}+\alpha_{5}+\alpha_{6}\right)$. Then

$$
s_{2,1}^{+N}=\left(\alpha_{3}-\alpha_{1}\right)\left(\alpha_{4} \alpha_{5} \alpha_{6}+\alpha_{2} \alpha_{5} \alpha_{6}+\alpha_{2} \alpha_{4} \alpha_{6}+\alpha_{2} \alpha_{4} \alpha_{5}\right)
$$

Remark 5.2.4. It is easy to see that the maps $+_{N}$ and $-_{N}$ restrict to

$$
+_{N}:\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}\right)^{G} \rightarrow\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{k}\right)^{G}, \quad \quad-{ }_{N}:\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{k}\right)^{G} \rightarrow\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}\right)^{G}
$$

and

$$
+_{N}:\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t}\right)^{G} \rightarrow\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{k}\right)^{G}, \quad \quad-{ }_{N}:\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{k}\right)^{G} \rightarrow\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t}\right)^{G}
$$

We conclude this section proving that the groups $\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{k}\right)^{G} / \epsilon_{t}^{k}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}\right)^{G}\right)$ and $\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{k}\right)^{G} / \epsilon_{t}^{k}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t}\right)^{G}\right)$ have the same order.

Theorem 5.2.5. Let $0 \leq t \leq k \leq n$ and $t+k=n$, then the groups $\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{k}\right)^{G} / \epsilon_{t}^{k}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}\right)^{G}\right)$ and $\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{k}\right)^{G} / \epsilon_{t}^{k}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t}\right)^{G}\right)$ have the same order.

Proof. The proof is given by three steps.

## Step 1.

$$
\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{k}\right)^{G} /\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{k}\right)^{G} \cong\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}\right)^{G} /\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t}\right)^{G}
$$

We observe that $\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}\right)^{G}$ and $\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t}\right)^{G}$ have the same rank $\tau_{t}$, the number of $G$-orbits on $L_{t}^{n}$. So by 2.4.11 there exist a basis $\left\{v_{1}, \cdots, v_{\tau_{t}}\right\}$ of $\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}\right)^{G}$ and non-zero integers $r_{1}, \cdots, r_{\tau_{t}}$ such that $\left\{r_{1} v_{1}, \cdots, r_{\tau_{t}} v_{\tau_{t}}\right\}$ is a basis of $\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t}^{n}\right)^{G}$. We denote by $v_{1}^{+N}, \cdots, v_{\tau_{t}}^{+N}$ the images of $v_{1}, \cdots, v_{\tau_{t}}$ by the map new tail-extension. The map new tail-extension is a $G$-isomorphism between the $\mathbb{Z}$-modules $\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}\right)^{G}$ and $\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{k}\right)^{G}$. It follows that the set $\left\{v_{1}^{+N}, \cdots, v_{\tau_{t}}^{+_{N}}\right\}$ is a basis of $\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{k}\right)^{G}$. Moreover, the restriction of $+_{N}$ to the $\mathbb{Z}$-module $\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t}\right)^{G}$ is an isomorphism between $\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t}\right)^{G}$ and $\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{k}\right)^{G}$, so the set $\left\{r_{1} v_{1}^{+_{N}}, \cdots, r_{\tau_{t}} v_{\tau_{t}}^{+_{N}}\right\}$ is a basis of $\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{k}\right)^{G}$. The claim follows.

## Step 2.

$$
\epsilon_{t}^{k}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}\right)^{G}\right) / \epsilon_{t}^{k}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t}\right)^{G}\right) \cong\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}\right)^{G} /\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t}\right)^{G} .
$$

The statement follows immediately from the first isomorphism Theorem, considering the linear map

$$
\gamma:\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}\right)^{G} \rightarrow \epsilon_{t}^{k}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}\right)^{G}\right) / \epsilon_{t}^{k}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t}\right)^{G}\right)
$$

defined by $\gamma\left(f_{t}\right)=\epsilon_{t}^{k}\left(f_{t}\right)+\epsilon_{t}^{k}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t}\right)^{G}\right)$. It is obviously surjective and its kernel is $\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t}\right)^{G}$.
Step 3. We use second isomorphism Theorem: we have

By parts (1)-(2) we deduce that the order of $\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{k}\right)^{G} / \epsilon_{t}^{k}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}\right)^{G}\right)$ is the same of the order of $\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{k}\right)^{G} / \epsilon_{t}^{k}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t}\right)^{G}\right)$.

### 5.3 Particular cases

The result of Theorem 5.2.5 suggests us the following question. When $t+k=n$, does exist an isomorphism between the finite groups

$$
\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{k}\right)^{G} / \epsilon_{t}^{k}\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{t}\right)^{G} \text { and }\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{k}\right)^{G} / \epsilon_{t}^{k}\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}\right)^{G} ?
$$

A positive answer is suggested by some cases (see in particular Theorem 5.3.4) which we are going to describe below and by numerical computational results which confirm the existence of isomorphism for any subgroup $G \subseteq \operatorname{Sym}(n)$, with $n \leq 11$ (see Appendix A).

In the sequel $G$ is any permutation subgroup of $\operatorname{Sym}(n)$.

To avoid confusion among coefficients and integers of $\Omega$, in this section we rename the elements of $\Omega$ putting

$$
\Omega=\left\{\alpha, \beta_{1}, \cdots, \beta_{n-1}\right\} .
$$

Theorem 5.3.1. Take $t=1, k=2$ and $n=3$. Let

$$
\varphi: \frac{\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{2}\right)^{G}}{\epsilon_{1}^{2}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{1}\right)^{G}\right)} \rightarrow \frac{\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{2}\right)^{G}}{\epsilon_{1}^{2}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{1}\right)^{G}\right)}
$$

be the linear map defined by $\varphi\left(f+\epsilon_{1}^{2}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{1}\right)^{G}\right)\right)=f+\epsilon_{1}^{2}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{1}\right)^{G}\right)$. Then $\varphi$ is an isomorphism.

Proof. Clearly $\varphi$ is well defined and a homomorphism. So it is enough to prove that $\varphi$ is an injection, since the groups $\frac{\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{2}\right)^{G}}{\epsilon_{1}^{2}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{1}\right)^{G}\right)}$ and $\frac{\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{2}\right)^{G}}{\left.\epsilon_{1}^{2}\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{1}\right)^{G}\right)}$ have the same order.

We remember that $\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{2}\right)^{G}=\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{2,0}\right)^{G} \oplus\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{2,1}\right)^{G}$. Since

$$
\epsilon_{1}^{2}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{1,1}\right)^{G}\right)=\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{2,1}\right)^{G}
$$

and

$$
\epsilon_{1}^{2}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{1,1}\right)^{G}\right) \subseteq \epsilon_{1}^{2}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{1}\right)^{G}\right),
$$

we get

$$
\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{2}\right)^{G}=\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{2,0}\right)^{G}+\epsilon_{1}^{2}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{1}\right)^{G}\right) .
$$

Now note that $\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{2,0}\right)^{G}=\frac{1}{2} \epsilon_{1}^{2} \epsilon_{0}^{1}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{0,0}\right)^{G}\right)$, so

$$
\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{2}\right)^{G}=\epsilon_{1}^{2}\left(\frac{1}{2} \epsilon_{0}^{1}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{0,0}\right)^{G}\right)+\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{1}\right)^{G}\right)
$$

Hence, if $f+\epsilon_{1}^{2}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{1}\right)^{G}\right) \in \operatorname{Ker} \varphi$ then, for some $f_{0} \in\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{0,0}\right)^{G}$ and $f_{1} \in\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{1}\right)^{G}$, we have

$$
f=\epsilon_{1}^{2}\left(\frac{1}{2} \epsilon_{0}^{1}\left(f_{0}\right)+f_{1}\right) \in\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{2}\right)^{G} \cap \epsilon_{1}^{2}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{1}\right)^{G}\right) .
$$

Since $\epsilon_{1}^{2}$ is injective we get $\frac{1}{2} \epsilon_{0}^{1}\left(f_{0}\right)+f_{1} \in\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{1}\right)^{G}$.

It follows

$$
\frac{1}{2} \epsilon_{0}^{1}\left(f_{0}\right) \in\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{1}\right)^{G} .
$$

The latter means that for the inner product we have

$$
<\frac{1}{2} \epsilon_{0}^{1}\left(f_{0}\right), x>=\frac{1}{2}<f_{0}, \partial_{1}^{0}(x)>=\frac{1}{2}<f_{0}, \emptyset>\in \mathbb{Z}
$$

for all $x \in L_{1}^{3}$. Thus $f_{0}$ is an even multiple of $\emptyset$ and $\frac{1}{2} \epsilon_{0}^{1}\left(f_{0}\right) \in \epsilon_{0}^{1}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{0,0}\right)^{G}\right)$. We conclude that $f \in \epsilon_{1}^{2}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{1}\right)^{G}\right)$.

Remark 5.3.2. We observe that the injectivity is independent from $n$, that is $\varphi$ is injective for any $n$, when $t=1$ and $k=2$.

Theorem 5.3.3. Let $t=3, k=4$ and $n=7$. Then the map

$$
\varphi: \frac{\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{4}\right)^{G}}{\epsilon_{3}^{4}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{3}\right)^{G}\right)} \rightarrow \frac{\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{4}\right)^{G}}{\epsilon_{3}^{4}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{3}\right)^{G}\right)}
$$

defined by $\varphi\left(f+\epsilon_{3}^{4}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{3}\right)^{G}\right)\right)=f+\epsilon_{3}^{4}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{3}\right)^{G}\right)$ is an isomorphism.

Proof. Clearly $\varphi$ is a linear map well defined, so by Lemma 5.2.5 it is enough to prove that it is an injection. First we consider a standard basis $\mathcal{B}$ of polytopes of type (2,2).
Put $\Omega=\left\{\alpha, \beta_{1}, \beta_{2}, \cdots, \beta_{6}\right\}$ and $\mathcal{B}=\left\{s_{1}, s_{2}, \cdots, s_{14}\right\}$, where

$$
\begin{array}{lll}
s_{1}=\left(\alpha-\beta_{1}\right)\left(\beta_{2}-\beta_{3}\right), & s_{2}=\left(\alpha-\beta_{1}\right)\left(\beta_{2}-\beta_{4}\right), & s_{3}=\left(\alpha-\beta_{1}\right)\left(\beta_{2}-\beta_{5}\right), \\
s_{4}=\left(\alpha-\beta_{1}\right)\left(\beta_{2}-\beta_{6}\right), & s_{5}=\left(\alpha-\beta_{2}\right)\left(\beta_{1}-\beta_{3}\right), & s_{6}=\left(\alpha-\beta_{2}\right)\left(\beta_{1}-\beta_{4}\right), \\
s_{7}=\left(\alpha-\beta_{2}\right)\left(\beta_{1}-\beta_{5}\right), & s_{8}=\left(\alpha-\beta_{2}\right)\left(\beta_{1}-\beta_{6}\right), & s_{9}=\left(\alpha-\beta_{3}\right)\left(\beta_{1}-\beta_{4}\right), \\
s_{10}=\left(\alpha-\beta_{3}\right)\left(\beta_{1}-\beta_{5}\right), & s_{11}=\left(\alpha-\beta_{3}\right)\left(\beta_{1}-\beta_{6}\right), & s_{12}=\left(\alpha-\beta_{4}\right)\left(\beta_{1}-\beta_{5}\right), \\
s_{13}=\left(\alpha-\beta_{4}\right)\left(\beta_{1}-\beta_{6}\right), & s_{14}=\left(\alpha-\beta_{5}\right)\left(\beta_{1}-\beta_{6}\right) &
\end{array}
$$

are the standard polytopes of type $(2,2)$.
Now let $f+\epsilon_{3}^{4}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{3}\right)^{G}\right) \in \operatorname{Ker} \varphi$. We want to prove that $f \in \epsilon_{3}^{4}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{3}\right)^{G}\right)$. For this purpose we observe that

$$
\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{4}\right)^{G}=\epsilon_{3}^{4}\left(\frac{1}{4}\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{3,0}\right)^{G}+\frac{1}{3}\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{3,1}\right)^{G}+\frac{1}{2}\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{3,2}\right)^{G}+\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{3,3}\right)^{G}\right) .
$$

So

$$
f=\epsilon_{3}^{4}\left(\frac{1}{4} f_{30}+\frac{1}{3} f_{31}+\frac{1}{2} f_{32}+f_{33}\right) \in \epsilon_{3}^{4}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{3}\right)^{G}\right),
$$

with $f_{30} \in\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{3,0}\right)^{G}, f_{31} \in\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{3,1}\right)^{G}, f_{32} \in\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{3,2}\right)^{G}$ and $f_{33} \in\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{3,3}\right)^{G}$. By injectivity of $\epsilon_{3}^{4}$ we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
h=\frac{1}{4} f_{30}+\frac{1}{3} f_{31}+\frac{1}{2} f_{32} \in\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{3}\right)^{G} . \tag{5.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

In particular $4 h \in\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{3}\right)^{G}$ and so

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{4}{3} f_{31} \in\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{3}\right)^{G} \tag{5.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $f_{31} \in\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{3,1}\right)^{G}$, there exists $f_{11} \in\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{1,1}\right)^{G}$ such that $f_{31}=\epsilon_{1}^{3}\left(f_{11}\right)$ and $f_{11}=\sum_{j=1}^{6} z_{j}(\alpha-$ $\beta_{j}$ ), where $\left\{\alpha-\beta_{1}, \alpha-\beta_{2}, \cdots, \alpha-\beta_{6}\right\}$ is a standard basis of polytopes of $\mathbb{Z} S_{1,1}$.

Then chosen $x=\left\{\beta_{i_{1}}, \beta_{i_{2}}, \beta_{i_{3}}\right\}$ and $y=\left\{\alpha, \beta_{i_{4}}, \beta_{i_{5}}\right\}$ two distinct sets in $L_{3}^{7}$, we have

$$
\frac{4}{3}<f_{31}, x+y>\in \mathbb{Z}
$$

Using the equation 4.6 , we have

$$
\frac{4}{3}<f_{31}, x+y>=\frac{4}{3}\left(-z_{i_{1}}-z_{i_{2}}-z_{i_{3}}-z_{i_{4}}-z_{i_{5}}+\sum_{r=1}^{6} z_{r}\right)
$$

Whence $z_{j} \equiv 0 \bmod 3$, for any $1 \leq j \leq 6$. It follows $\frac{1}{3} f_{31} \in\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{3,1}\right)^{G}$.
To this point it remains to prove that $h^{\prime}=h-\frac{1}{3} f_{31}=\frac{1}{4} f_{30}+\frac{1}{2} f_{32} \in\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{3}\right)^{G}$. From equations 5.4 and 5.5 we deduce

$$
h^{\prime} \in\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{3}\right)^{G},
$$

whence $2 h^{\prime}=\frac{1}{2} f_{30}+f_{32} \in\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{3}\right)^{G}$ and so $h_{30}=\frac{1}{2} f_{30} \in\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{3}\right)^{G} \cap E_{3,0}^{7}=\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{3,0}\right)^{G}$. Replacing it in $h^{\prime}$ we have $h^{\prime}=\frac{1}{2} h_{30}+\frac{1}{2} f_{32}$. We can suppose

$$
h^{\prime}=\frac{1}{2}\left(2 \zeta_{0}+\rho_{0}\right) s_{\emptyset}^{3}+\frac{1}{2} \sum_{i=1}^{14}\left(2 \zeta_{i}+\rho_{i}\right) s_{i}^{3}
$$

where $\zeta_{0}, \zeta_{i} \in \mathbb{Z}, \rho_{0}, \rho_{i} \in\{0,1\}, s_{\emptyset}^{3}$ is the polytope of type ( 3,0 ), $s_{i}$ as above and $s_{i}^{3}=\epsilon_{2}^{3}\left(s_{i}\right)$. Our goal is to prove that $\rho_{0}=\rho_{1}=\cdots=\rho_{14}=0$.

For this purpose, put $h^{\prime \prime}=\frac{1}{2} \rho_{0} s_{\emptyset}^{3}+\frac{1}{2} \sum_{i=1}^{14} \rho_{i} s_{i}^{3}$, for any $x, y \in L_{3}^{7}$ we have $\left.\left\langle h^{\prime \prime}, x-y\right\rangle=\frac{1}{2}\left\langle\rho_{0} s_{\emptyset}^{3}, x-y\right\rangle+\frac{1}{2}<\sum_{i=1}^{14} \rho_{i} s_{i}^{3}, x-y\right\rangle=\frac{1}{2}\left\langle\sum_{i=1}^{14} \rho_{i} s_{i}^{3}, x-y>\in \mathbb{Z}\right.$.

If $x=\left\{\alpha, \beta_{1}, \beta_{2}\right\}$ and $y=\left\{\beta_{3}, \beta_{4}, \beta_{5}\right\}$ then

$$
\begin{equation*}
<h^{\prime \prime}, x-y>=\frac{1}{2}\left(\sum_{i=9}^{14} \rho_{i}-\rho_{9}-\rho_{10}-\rho_{12}\right)=\frac{1}{2}\left(\rho_{11}+\rho_{13}+\rho_{14}\right) \in \mathbb{Z} \tag{5.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

If $x=\left\{\alpha, \beta_{1}, \beta_{2}\right\}$ and $y=\left\{\beta_{3}, \beta_{4}, \beta_{6}\right\}$ then

$$
\begin{equation*}
<h^{\prime \prime}, x-y>=\frac{1}{2}\left(\sum_{i=9}^{14} \rho_{i}-\rho_{9}-\rho_{11}-\rho_{13}\right)=\frac{1}{2}\left(\rho_{10}+\rho_{12}+\rho_{14}\right) \in \mathbb{Z} . \tag{5.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

If $x=\left\{\alpha, \beta_{1}, \beta_{2}\right\}$ and $y=\left\{\beta_{3}, \beta_{5}, \beta_{6}\right\}$ then

$$
\begin{equation*}
<h^{\prime \prime}, x-y>=\frac{1}{2}\left(\sum_{i=9}^{14} \rho_{i}-\rho_{10}-\rho_{11}-\rho_{14}\right)=\frac{1}{2}\left(\rho_{9}+\rho_{12}+\rho_{13}\right) \in \mathbb{Z} \tag{5.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

If $x=\left\{\alpha, \beta_{1}, \beta_{2}\right\}$ and $y=\left\{\beta_{4}, \beta_{5}, \beta_{6}\right\}$ then

$$
\begin{equation*}
<h^{\prime \prime}, x-y>=\frac{1}{2}\left(\sum_{i=9}^{14} \rho_{i}-\rho_{12}-\rho_{13}-\rho_{14}\right)=\frac{1}{2}\left(\rho_{9}+\rho_{10}+\rho_{11}\right) \in \mathbb{Z} \tag{5.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

If $x=\left\{\alpha, \beta_{1}, \beta_{3}\right\}$ and $y=\left\{\beta_{2}, \beta_{4}, \beta_{5}\right\}$ then
$<h^{\prime \prime}, x-y>=\frac{1}{2}\left(\rho_{6}+\rho_{7}+\rho_{8}+\rho_{12}+\rho_{13}+\rho_{14}-\rho_{6}-\rho_{7}-\rho_{12}\right)=\frac{1}{2}\left(\rho_{8}+\rho_{13}+\rho_{14}\right) \in \mathbb{Z}$.

From equations 5.6 and 5.10 , we have $\frac{1}{2}\left(\rho_{11}-\rho_{8}\right) \in \mathbb{Z}$, so

$$
\rho_{8}=\rho_{11} .
$$

If $x=\left\{\alpha, \beta_{1}, \beta_{3}\right\}$ and $y=\left\{\beta_{2}, \beta_{4}, \beta_{6}\right\}$ then
$<h^{\prime \prime}, x-y>=\frac{1}{2}\left(\rho_{6}+\rho_{7}+\rho_{8}+\rho_{12}+\rho_{13}+\rho_{14}-\rho_{6}-\rho_{8}-\rho_{13}\right)=\frac{1}{2}\left(\rho_{7}+\rho_{12}+\rho_{14}\right) \in \mathbb{Z}$.

From equations 5.7 and 5.11 we have $\frac{1}{2}\left(\rho_{10}-\rho_{7}\right) \in \mathbb{Z}$, so

$$
\rho_{10}=\rho_{7} .
$$

Again if $x=\left\{\alpha, \beta_{1}, \beta_{3}\right\}$ and $y=\left\{\beta_{2}, \beta_{5}, \beta_{6}\right\}$ then
$<h^{\prime \prime}, x-y>=\frac{1}{2}\left(\rho_{6}+\rho_{7}+\rho_{8}+\rho_{12}+\rho_{13}+\rho_{14}-\rho_{7}-\rho_{8}-\rho_{14}\right)=\frac{1}{2}\left(\rho_{6}+\rho_{12}+\rho_{13}\right) \in \mathbb{Z}$.

From equations 5.8 and $5.12, \frac{1}{2}\left(\rho_{6}-\rho_{9}\right) \in \mathbb{Z}$, thus

$$
\rho_{6}=\rho_{9} .
$$

If $x=\left\{\alpha, \beta_{1}, \beta_{4}\right\}$ and $y=\left\{\beta_{2}, \beta_{3}, \beta_{5}\right\}$ then
$<h^{\prime \prime}, x-y>=\frac{1}{2}\left(\rho_{5}+\rho_{7}+\rho_{8}+\rho_{10}+\rho_{11}+\rho_{14}-\rho_{5}-\rho_{7}-\rho_{10}\right)=\frac{1}{2}\left(\rho_{8}+\rho_{11}+\rho_{14}\right) \in \mathbb{Z}$.

From 5.10 and $5.13, \frac{1}{2}\left(\rho_{11}-\rho_{13}\right) \in \mathbb{Z}$, thus

$$
\rho_{11}=\rho_{13}
$$

moreover from 5.13 and $\rho_{8}=\rho_{11}=\rho_{13}$, we have $\frac{1}{2}\left(\rho_{8}+\rho_{11}+\rho_{14}\right)=\frac{1}{2}\left(2 \rho_{8}+\rho_{14}\right) \in \mathbb{Z}$, so

$$
\rho_{14}=0 .
$$

If $x=\left\{\alpha, \beta_{1}, \beta_{4}\right\}$ and $y=\left\{\beta_{3}, \beta_{5}, \beta_{6}\right\}$ then
$<h^{\prime \prime}, x-y>=\frac{1}{2}\left(\rho_{5}+\rho_{7}+\rho_{8}+\rho_{10}+\rho_{11}+\rho_{14}-\rho_{10}-\rho_{11}-\rho_{14}\right)=\frac{1}{2}\left(\rho_{5}+\rho_{7}+\rho_{8}\right) \in \mathbb{Z}$.

From equations 5.14, 5.9, $\rho_{11}=\rho_{8}$ and $\rho_{10}=\rho_{7}$, we have $\frac{1}{2}\left(\rho_{9}-\rho_{5}\right) \in \mathbb{Z}$, so

$$
\rho_{9}=\rho_{5} .
$$

If $x=\left\{\alpha, \beta_{1}, \beta_{5}\right\}$ and $y=\left\{\beta_{2}, \beta_{3}, \beta_{4}\right\}$ then

$$
\begin{equation*}
<h^{\prime \prime}, x-y>=\frac{1}{2}\left(\rho_{5}+\rho_{6}+\rho_{8}+\rho_{9}+\rho_{11}+\rho_{13}-\rho_{5}-\rho_{6}-\rho_{9}\right)=\frac{1}{2}\left(\rho_{8}+\rho_{11}+\rho_{13}\right) \in \mathbb{Z} . \tag{5.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

From equation 5.15 and $\rho_{8}=\rho_{11}=\rho_{13}$, we have $\frac{1}{2}\left(3 \rho_{8}\right) \in \mathbb{Z}$ and so

$$
\rho_{8}=0,
$$

whence

$$
\rho_{8}=\rho_{11}=\rho_{13}=0
$$

If $x=\left\{\alpha, \beta_{1}, \beta_{6}\right\}$ and $y=\left\{\beta_{2}, \beta_{3}, \beta_{4}\right\}$ then
$<h^{\prime \prime}, x-y>=\frac{1}{2}\left(\rho_{5}+\rho_{6}+\rho_{7}+\rho_{9}+\rho_{10}+\rho_{12}-\rho_{5}-\rho_{6}-\rho_{9}\right)=\frac{1}{2}\left(\rho_{7}+\rho_{10}+\rho_{12}\right) \in \mathbb{Z}$.

From equation 5.16 and $\rho_{7}=\rho_{10}$ we have $\frac{1}{2}\left(2 \rho_{7}+\rho_{12}\right) \in \mathbb{Z}$, so

$$
\rho_{12}=0
$$

moreover from equation 5.7 and $\rho_{12}=\rho_{14}=0$,

$$
\frac{1}{2}\left(\rho_{10}+\rho_{12}+\rho_{14}\right)=\frac{1}{2} \rho_{10} \in \mathbb{Z}
$$

hence

$$
\rho_{10}=0
$$

and by equation 5.9 and $\rho_{11}=\rho_{10}=0$,

$$
\rho_{9}=0 .
$$

If $x=\left\{\alpha, \beta_{2}, \beta_{3}\right\}$ and $y=\left\{\beta_{1}, \beta_{4}, \beta_{5}\right\}$ then

$$
\begin{equation*}
<h^{\prime \prime}, x-y>=\frac{1}{2}\left(\rho_{2}+\rho_{3}+\rho_{4}-\rho_{2}-\rho_{3}+\rho_{13}+\rho_{14}\right)=\frac{1}{2}\left(\rho_{4}+\rho_{13}+\rho_{14}\right) \in \mathbb{Z} \tag{5.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $\rho_{13}=\rho_{14}=0$, we have

$$
\rho_{4}=0 .
$$

If $x=\left\{\alpha, \beta_{2}, \beta_{3}\right\}$ and $y=\left\{\beta_{1}, \beta_{4}, \beta_{6}\right\}$ then

$$
\begin{equation*}
<h^{\prime \prime}, x-y>=\frac{1}{2}\left(\rho_{2}+\rho_{3}+\rho_{4}-\rho_{2}-\rho_{4}+\rho_{12}\right)=\frac{1}{2}\left(\rho_{3}+\rho_{12}\right) \in \mathbb{Z} . \tag{5.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

By equation 5.18 and $\rho_{12}=0$ we have

$$
\rho_{3}=0
$$

Again if $x=\left\{\alpha, \beta_{2}, \beta_{3}\right\}$ and $y=\left\{\beta_{1}, \beta_{5}, \beta_{6}\right\}$ then

$$
\begin{equation*}
<h^{\prime \prime}, x-y>=\frac{1}{2}\left(\rho_{2}+\rho_{3}+\rho_{4}-\rho_{3}-\rho_{4}\right)=\frac{1}{2} \rho_{2} \in \mathbb{Z} \tag{5.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

so

$$
\rho_{2}=0
$$

Finally if $x=\left\{\alpha, \beta_{2}, \beta_{4}\right\}$ and $y=\left\{\beta_{1}, \beta_{5}, \beta_{6}\right\}$ then

$$
\begin{equation*}
<h^{\prime \prime}, x-y>=\frac{1}{2}\left(\rho_{1}+\rho_{3}+\rho_{4}-\rho_{9}-\rho_{3}-\rho_{4}\right)=\frac{1}{2}\left(\rho_{1}-\rho_{9}\right) \in \mathbb{Z} \tag{5.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

whence

$$
\rho_{1}=0
$$

We conclude that $h^{\prime \prime}=\frac{1}{2} \rho_{0} s_{\emptyset}^{3} \in\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{3}\right)^{G}$, hence

$$
\rho_{0}=0
$$

and this concludes the proof.

Next Theorem considers a more general situation.
Theorem 5.3.4. Let $t=2, k=n-2$ and $\operatorname{gcd}(n, 3)=1$. Let

$$
\varphi: \frac{\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{n-2}\right)^{G}}{\epsilon_{2}^{n-2}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{2}\right)^{G}\right)} \rightarrow \frac{\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{n-2}\right)^{G}}{\epsilon_{2}^{n-2}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{2}\right)^{G}\right)}
$$

be a map defined by $\varphi\left(f+\epsilon_{2}^{n-2}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{2}\right)^{G}\right)\right)=f+\epsilon_{2}^{n-2}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{2}\right)^{G}\right)$. Then $\varphi$ is an isomorphism.

Proof. Clearly $\varphi$ is a linear map well defined. Since $\frac{\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{n-2}\right)^{G}}{\epsilon_{2}^{n-2}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{2}\right)^{G}\right)}$ and $\frac{\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{n-2}\right)^{G}}{\epsilon_{2}^{n-2}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{2}\right)^{G}\right)}$ have the same order, it is enough to prove that $\varphi$ is injective. Note that, by proof of Theorem 4.5.1, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{n-2}\right)^{G}= & \left(\mathbb{Z} S_{n-2,0}\right)^{G} \oplus\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{n-2,1}\right)^{G} \oplus\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{n-2,2}\right)^{G}= \\
& =\frac{2}{(n-2)(n-3)} \epsilon_{2}^{n-2}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{2,0}\right)^{G}\right)+\frac{1}{(n-3)} \epsilon_{2}^{n-2} \epsilon_{1}^{2}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{1,1}\right)^{G}\right)+\epsilon_{2}^{n-2}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{2,2}\right)^{G}\right)= \\
& =\epsilon_{2}^{n-2}\left(\frac{2}{(n-2)(n-3)}\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{2,0}\right)^{G}+\frac{1}{(n-3)} \epsilon_{1}^{2}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{1,1}\right)^{G}\right)+\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{2,2}\right)^{G}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

hence if $f+\epsilon_{2}^{n-2}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{2}\right)^{G}\right) \in \operatorname{Ker} \varphi$ then

$$
f=\epsilon_{2}^{n-2}\left(\frac{2}{(n-2)(n-3)} f_{20}+\frac{1}{(n-3)} \epsilon_{1}^{2}\left(f_{11}\right)+f_{22}\right) \in \epsilon_{2}^{n-2}\left(\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{2}\right)^{G}\right)
$$

with $f_{20} \in\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{2,0}\right)^{G}, f_{11} \in\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{1,1}\right)^{G}$ and $f_{22} \in\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{2,2}\right)^{G}$. This implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
h=\frac{2}{(n-2)(n-3)} f_{20}+\frac{1}{(n-3)} \epsilon_{1}^{2}\left(f_{11}\right) \in\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{2}\right)^{G} \tag{5.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

by injectivity of $\epsilon_{2}^{n-2}$. We want to prove that $\frac{2}{(n-2)(n-3)} f_{20} \in\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{2,0}\right)^{G}$ and $\frac{1}{(n-3)} \epsilon_{1}^{2}\left(f_{11}\right) \in$ $\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{2,1}\right)^{G}$, so that $h \in\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{2}\right)^{G}$.

Clearly

$$
\begin{equation*}
(n-3) h=\frac{2}{n-2} f_{20}+\epsilon_{1}^{2}\left(f_{11}\right) \in\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{2}\right)^{G} \tag{5.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

whence

$$
\frac{2}{n-2} f_{20} \in\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{2,0}\right)^{G}
$$

Put $h_{20}=\frac{2}{n-2} f_{20}$, by definition

$$
h_{20}=b s_{20}
$$

with $s_{20}=\sum_{x \in L_{2}^{n}} x$ polytope of type $(2,0)$ and $b \in \mathbb{Z}$. We can write

$$
h=\frac{1}{n-3} h_{20}+\frac{1}{n-3} \epsilon_{1}^{2}\left(f_{11}\right) \in\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{2}\right)^{G}
$$

with $h_{20} \in\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{2,0}\right)^{G}$ and $f_{11} \in\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{1,1}\right)^{G}$.
It is enough to prove that $b \equiv 0 \bmod (n-3)$. We consider $\left\{\alpha-\beta_{1}, \alpha-\beta_{2}, \cdots, \alpha-\beta_{n-1}\right\}$ a standard basis of polytopes of type (1,1). Let $x=\left\{\alpha, \beta_{i}\right\}, y=\left\{\alpha, \beta_{j}\right\}$, with $i \neq j$ and $1 \leq i, j \leq n-1$.

It is easy to see that $\frac{1}{n-3}\left\langle h_{20}, x-y>=\frac{1}{n-3}(b-b)=0\right.$. It follows
$\left.\left.<h, x-y>=\frac{1}{n-3}<\epsilon_{1}^{2}\left(f_{11}\right), x-y>=\frac{1}{n-3}<f_{11}, \partial_{2}^{1}(x-y)\right\rangle=\frac{1}{n-3}<f_{11}, \beta_{i}-\beta_{j}\right\rangle$
is integer as $h \in\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{2}\right)^{G}$. Since $f_{11} \in\left(\mathbb{Z} S_{1,1}\right)^{G}$, we have

$$
f_{11}=z_{1}\left(\alpha-\beta_{1}\right)+z_{2}\left(\alpha-\beta_{2}\right)+\cdots+z_{n-1}\left(\alpha-\beta_{n-1}\right),
$$

for some integer $z_{1}, \cdots, z_{n-1}$. As $f_{11}=\left(z_{1}+z_{2}+\cdots+z_{n-1}\right) \alpha-z_{1} \beta_{1}-z_{2} \beta_{2}-\cdots-z_{n-1} \beta_{n-1}$, then the inner product 5.23 becomes

$$
<h, x-y>=\frac{1}{n-3}\left(-z_{i}+z_{j}\right) \in \mathbb{Z},
$$

thus

$$
\begin{equation*}
-z_{i}+z_{j} \equiv 0 \bmod (n-3) . \tag{5.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

Moreover

$$
\begin{aligned}
<h, x> & =\frac{1}{n-3}<h_{20}, x>+\frac{1}{n-3}<\epsilon_{1}^{2}\left(f_{11}\right), x>=\frac{1}{n-3}<h_{20}, x>+\frac{1}{n-3}<f_{11}, \partial_{2}^{1}(x)>= \\
& =\frac{1}{n-3}<h_{20}, x>+\frac{1}{n-3}<f_{11}, \alpha+\beta_{i}>=\frac{1}{n-3} b+\frac{1}{n-3}\left(z_{1}+\cdots+z_{n-1}-z_{i}\right) \in \mathbb{Z},
\end{aligned}
$$

whence

$$
\begin{equation*}
b+z_{1}+\cdots+z_{n-1}-z_{i} \equiv 0 \bmod (n-3) \tag{5.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now let $w=\left\{\beta_{i}, \beta_{j}\right\}$, with $1 \leq i, j \leq n-1$ and $i \neq j$, so $\left.<h, w\right\rangle=\frac{1}{n-3}<h_{20}, w>$ $+\frac{1}{n-3}<\epsilon_{1}^{2}\left(f_{11}\right), w>=\frac{1}{n-3} b+\frac{1}{n-3}<f_{11}, \partial_{2}^{1}(w)>=\frac{1}{n-3} b+\frac{1}{n-3}<f_{11}, \beta_{i}+\beta_{j}>=$
$\frac{1}{n-3}\left(b-z_{i}-z_{j}\right)$. So we conclude

$$
\begin{equation*}
b-z_{i}-z_{j} \equiv 0 \bmod (n-3) \tag{5.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

From equations 5.24 and 5.26 we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
b-2 z_{i} \equiv 0 \bmod (n-3) \tag{5.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

Again, from 5.26 and 5.25 , for each set of three distinct indexes $i, j, l$, where $1 \leq i, j, l \leq$ $n-1$ we have
$b+z_{1}+\cdots+z_{n-1}-z_{i}+\sum_{j=1, j \neq i, l}^{n-1}\left(b-z_{l}-z_{j}\right)=b+(n-3) b+z_{l}-(n-3) z_{l} \equiv 0 \bmod (n-3)$, thus

$$
\begin{equation*}
b+z_{l} \equiv 0 \bmod (n-3) \tag{5.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

Finally, by 5.27 and 5.28 , we can deduce

$$
b-2 z_{l}+2 b+2 z_{l}=3 b \equiv 0 \bmod (n-3)
$$

for each $1 \leq l \leq n-1$. Since $\operatorname{gcd}(n, 3)=1$ by hypothesis, we conclude

$$
b \equiv 0 \bmod (n-3)
$$

This concludes the proof.

We conclude this section giving the following conjecture

Conjecture 5.3.5. If $0 \leq t \leq k \leq n$ and $t+k=n$, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{k}^{n}\right)^{G}}{\epsilon_{t}^{k}\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n}\right)^{G}} \cong\left(C_{d_{0}}\right)^{m_{0}} \times\left(C_{d_{1}}\right)^{m_{1}} \times \cdots \times\left(C_{d_{t}}\right)^{m_{t}} \tag{5.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $d_{i}=\binom{k-i}{t-i}$ and $m_{i}=\tau_{i}-\tau_{i-1}$, for $i=0, \cdots, t$.

In general this statement is not true for $t+k<n$.

Example 5.3.6. If $n=8, t=2, k=3$ and

$$
G=\langle(1,2,3,8)(4,6,7,5),(5,8,6),(1,4,7),(2,6)(5,8),(2,8)(5,6),(1,7)(3,4),(1,4)(3,7)\rangle,
$$

we consider the bases above introduced $\mathcal{B}_{\Omega^{t}}$ and $\mathcal{B}_{\Omega^{k}}$ (see the beginning of chapter) and we write the matrix $X_{23}^{+}$associated to the map

$$
\epsilon_{2}^{3}:\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{2}^{8}\right)^{G} \rightarrow\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{3}^{8}\right)^{G},
$$

with respect to these bases. By direct computation with Magma Computational Algebra System, we get $X_{23}^{+}=\left(\begin{array}{ll}3 & 0 \\ 1 & 2\end{array}\right)$. Its invariant factors are 1 and 6 . So that

$$
\frac{\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{3}^{8}\right)^{G}}{\epsilon_{2}^{3}\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{2}^{8}\right)^{G}} \cong C_{6}
$$

If the equation 5.29 is true for $t+k<n$, then

$$
\frac{\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{3}^{8}\right)^{G}}{\epsilon_{2}^{3}\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{2}^{8}\right)^{G}} \cong\left(C_{d_{0}}\right)^{m_{0}} \times\left(C_{d_{1}}\right)^{m_{1}} \times\left(C_{d_{2}}\right)^{m_{2}}
$$

with $d_{0}=3, d_{1}=2, d_{2}=1, m_{0}=1, m_{1}=0$ and $m_{2}=1$. So $C_{6} \cong C_{3}$. Contradiction.

### 5.4 Matrices $X_{t k}^{-}$and $X_{t k}^{+}$

In this last section we report some consideration about the matrices $X_{t k}^{+}=\left(x_{i j}^{+}\right)$and $X_{t k}^{-}=\left(x_{j i}^{-}\right)$of the tactical decomposition $\left(\Omega^{t}, \Omega^{k}\right)$. Here, we follow closely the original proof of Wilson's Theorem ( [15] ) for a diagonal form of $W_{t k}$. Actually we will prove that the Equations 5.30 and 5.31 hold in order to get that the matrices

$$
M_{t k}^{+}=\left(X_{0 k}^{+}\left|X_{1 k}^{+}\right| \cdots \mid X_{t k}^{+}\right)
$$

and

$$
M_{t k}^{-}=\left(\begin{array}{c}
X_{0 k}^{-} \\
X_{1 k}^{-} \\
\cdots \\
X_{t k}^{-}
\end{array}\right)
$$

have rank $\tau_{t}$ and index 1. See chapter 3, Proposition 3.1.3.

We begin giving an example for matrices $X_{t k}^{+}=\left(x_{i j}^{+}\right)$and $X_{t k}^{-}=\left(x_{j i}^{-}\right)$where $n=6, t=2$ and $G=\langle(1,2,3),(1,2)(4,5)\rangle$. We recall that $X_{t k}^{+}=\left(x_{i j}^{+}\right)$and $X_{t k}^{-}=\left(x_{j i}^{-}\right)$are the matrices associated to $\epsilon_{t}^{k}:\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n}\right)^{G} \rightarrow\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{k}^{n}\right)^{G}$ and $\partial_{k}^{t}:\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{k}^{n}\right)^{G} \rightarrow\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}^{n}\right)^{G}$ with respect to the bases above introduced $\mathcal{B}_{\Omega^{t}}$ and $\mathcal{B}_{\Omega^{k}}$ (see the beginning of chapter).

Example 5.4.1. Let $n=6, t=2$ and $G=\langle(1,2,3),(1,2)(4,5)\rangle$. Then the 2 -orbits are

$$
\begin{gathered}
\Delta_{1}=\{\{1,2\},\{2,3\},\{1,3\}\}, \Delta_{2}=\{\{1,4\},\{2.4\},\{2,5\},\{3,4\},\{1,5\},\{3,5\}\}, \\
\Delta_{3}=\{\{1,6\},\{2,6\},\{3,6\}\}, \Delta_{4}=\{\{5,6\},\{4,6\}\}, \Delta_{5}=\{\{4,5\}\}
\end{gathered}
$$

and the 4-orbits

$$
\begin{gathered}
\Gamma_{1}=\{\{3,4,5,6\},\{1,4,5,6\},\{2,4,5,6\}\}, \\
\Gamma_{2}=\{\{2,3,5,6\},\{1,3,5,6\},\{1,3,4,6\},\{1,2,5,6\},\{2,3,4,6\},\{1,2,4,6\}\}, \\
\Gamma_{3}=\{\{2,3,4,5\},\{1,3,4,5\},\{1,2,4,5\}\}, \Gamma_{4}=\{\{1,2,3,4\},\{1,2,3,5\}\}, \Gamma_{5}=\{\{1,2,3,6\}\} .
\end{gathered}
$$

So we have that

$$
\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{2}\right)^{G}=\operatorname{span}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(\sum_{x \in \Delta_{j}} x: j=1, \cdots, 5\right),
$$

and

$$
\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{4}\right)^{G}=\operatorname{span}_{\mathbb{Z}}\left(\sum_{y \in \Gamma_{i}} y: i=1, \cdots, 5\right) .
$$

Then

$$
X_{24}^{+}=X_{24}^{-}=\left(\begin{array}{ccccc}
0 & 2 & 1 & 2 & 1 \\
1 & 2 & 2 & 1 & 0 \\
1 & 4 & 0 & 0 & 1 \\
3 & 3 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
3 & 0 & 3 & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right)
$$

To determine the matrix $M_{14}^{+}=\left(X_{04}^{+} \mid X_{14}^{+}\right)$we consider the 1 -orbits

$$
\{1,2,3\}
$$

$\{6\}$.
Then

$$
M_{14}^{+}=\left(\begin{array}{cccc}
1 & 1 & 2 & 1 \\
1 & 2 & 1 & 1 \\
1 & 2 & 2 & 0 \\
1 & 3 & 1 & 0 \\
1 & 3 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right)
$$

Now to prove that matrices $M_{t k}^{+}$and $M_{t k}^{-}$have index 1 we introduce some Lemmas. Denoting by $H_{t}$ the incidence matrix between t-subsets and t-orbits, that is $H_{t}\left(T, \Delta_{j}\right)=1$ if $T \in \Delta_{j}$ and $H_{t}\left(T, \Delta_{j}\right)=0$ otherwise; put $H_{t}^{T} H_{t}=N_{t}$; it is easy to recognize that $N_{t}$ is the diagonal matrix such that $N_{t}(j, j)$ is the number of elements in the orbit $\Delta_{j}$. We have the following results (see also [5] section 1.3, and [13]).

Lemma 5.4.2. [13](Lemma 3.1)

1. $H_{k} X_{t k}^{+}=W_{t k}^{T} H_{t}$ and $H_{t} X_{t k}^{-}=W_{t k} H_{k}$;
2. $\left(X_{t k}^{+}\right)^{T} N_{k} X_{t k}^{+}=H_{t}^{T} W_{t k} W_{t k}^{T} H_{t}$ and $\left(X_{t k}^{-}\right)^{T} N_{t} X_{t k}^{-}=H_{k}^{T} W_{t k}^{T} W_{t k} H_{k}$;
3. $N_{k} X_{t k}^{+}=\left(X_{t k}^{-}\right)^{T} N_{t}, \quad N_{k}\left(X_{t k}^{+} X_{t k}^{-}\right)=\left(X_{t k}^{-}\right)^{T} N_{t} X_{t k}^{-}$,

$$
N_{t}\left(X_{t k}^{-} X_{t k}^{+}\right)=\left(X_{t k}^{+}\right)^{T} N_{k} X_{t k}^{+} \text {and } N_{t}\left(X_{t k}^{-} X_{t k}^{+}\right) N_{t}^{-1}=\left(X_{t k}^{-} X_{t k}^{+}\right)^{T} .
$$

Lemma 5.4.3. Let $0 \leq j \leq t \leq k \leq n$, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
X_{j t}^{-} X_{t k}^{-}=\binom{k-j}{t-j} X_{j k}^{-} \tag{5.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. By Lemmas 5.4.2 and 3.1.2,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& N_{j} X_{j t}^{-} X_{t k}^{-}=H_{j}^{T} H_{j} X_{j t}^{-} X_{t k}^{-}=H_{j}^{T} W_{j t} H_{t} X_{t k}^{-}=H_{j}^{T} W_{j t} W_{t k} H_{k}= \\
& =H_{j}^{T}\binom{k-j}{t-j} W_{j k} H_{k}=\binom{k-j}{t-j} H_{j}^{T} H_{j} X_{j k}^{-}=\binom{k-j}{t-j} N_{j} X_{j k}^{-} .
\end{aligned}
$$

It follows

$$
X_{j t}^{-} X_{t k}^{-}=\binom{k-j}{t-j} X_{j k}^{-}
$$

because $N_{j}$ is non-singular.
Lemma 5.4.4. Let $0 \leq j \leq t \leq k \leq n$, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
X_{t k}^{+} X_{j t}^{+}=\binom{k-j}{t-j} X_{j k}^{+} \tag{5.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. By Lemmas 5.4.2 and 3.1.2,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& N_{k} X_{t k}^{+} X_{j t}^{+}=H_{k}^{T} H_{k} X_{t k}^{+} X_{j t}^{+}=H_{k}^{T} W_{t k}^{T} H_{t} X_{j t}^{+}=H_{k}^{T} W_{t k}^{T} W_{j t}^{T} H_{j}= \\
& =H_{k}^{T}\binom{k-j}{t-j} W_{j k}^{T} H_{j}=\binom{k-j}{t-j} H_{k}^{T} H_{k} X_{j k}^{+}=\binom{k-j}{t-j} N_{k} X_{j k}^{+} .
\end{aligned}
$$

It follows

$$
X_{t k}^{+} X_{j t}^{+}=\binom{k-j}{t-j} X_{j k}^{+}
$$

because $N_{k}$ is non-singular.

We introduce now a new matrix

Definition 5.4.5. Let $0 \leq t \leq k \leq n$ and $t+k \leq n$. Then for any $0 \leq i \leq t$ we define $\bar{X}_{i k}$ the matrix whose rows are indexed by all $G$-orbits $\Lambda$ on $L_{i}^{n}$ and the columns by $G$-orbits $\Gamma$ on $L_{k}^{n}$, such that

$$
\bar{X}_{i k}(\Lambda, \Gamma)=\mid\{y \in \Gamma: y \cap x=\emptyset, \text { for one fixed } x \in \Lambda\} \mid
$$

Lemma 5.4.6. Let $0 \leq t \leq k \leq n$ and $t+k \leq n$. Then for any $0 \leq i \leq t$

$$
H_{i} \bar{X}_{i k}=\bar{W}_{i k} H_{k},
$$

where for each $i$-set $x$ and $k$-set $y$

$$
\bar{W}_{i k}(x, y)=\left\{\begin{array}{l}
1 \text { if } x \cap y=\emptyset \\
0 \text { otherwise }
\end{array} .\right.
$$

Proof. First we note that $x \cap y=\emptyset$ if and only if $x^{g} \cap y^{g}=\emptyset$, for any $g \in G$.
So $\mid\{y \in \Gamma: y \cap x=\emptyset$, for one fixed $x \in \Lambda\} \mid$ depends only on the orbit $\Lambda$ and not on a choice of $x$. Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
H_{i} \bar{X}_{i k}(x, \Gamma)=\sum_{\Lambda} H_{i}(x, \Lambda) \bar{X}_{i k}(\Lambda, \Gamma), \tag{5.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

since $H_{i}(x, \Lambda)=1$ if and only if $x \in \Lambda$, we have that the right-hand side of equation 5.32 is equal to $H_{i}(x, \Lambda) \bar{X}_{i k}(\Lambda, \Gamma)=\bar{X}_{i k}(\Lambda, \Gamma)$, with $x \in \Lambda$.

On the other hand, by definition of $\bar{X}_{i k}$, we have

$$
\bar{W}_{i k} H_{k}(x, \Gamma)=\sum_{y \in L_{k}^{n}} \bar{W}_{i k}(x, y) H_{k}(y, \Gamma)=\sum_{x \cap y=\emptyset, y \in \Gamma} 1=\bar{X}_{i k}(\Lambda, \Gamma) .
$$

The claim follows.
Theorem 5.4.7. Let $0 \leq t<k \leq n$ and $t+k=n$. Then

$$
M_{t k}^{+}=\left(X_{0 k}^{+}\left|X_{1 k}^{+}\right| \cdots \mid X_{t k}^{+}\right)
$$

has rank $\tau_{k}$ and index 1 . Moreover the $\mathbb{Z}$-module spanned by its columns is equal to $\mathbb{Z}^{\tau_{k}}$.

Proof. First we prove that

$$
N_{k} M_{t k}^{+}\left(\begin{array}{c}
+\bar{X}_{0 k} \\
-\bar{X}_{1 k} \\
\ldots \\
(-1)^{t} \bar{X}_{t k}
\end{array}\right)=N_{k}
$$

Indeed by Lemma 5.4.2, we have $H_{k} X_{i k}^{+}=W_{i k}^{T} H_{i}$; moreover by Lemma 5.4.6, $H_{i} \bar{X}_{i k}=$ $\bar{W}_{i k} H_{k}$ and finally, by Equation $3.2, \sum_{i=0}^{t}(-1)^{i} \bar{W}_{i k}^{T} W_{i k}=I_{\binom{n}{k}}$, where $I_{\binom{n}{k}}$ is the identity matrix of order $\binom{n}{k}$, we deduce

$$
\begin{aligned}
& N_{k} M_{t k}^{+}\left(\begin{array}{c}
+\bar{X}_{0 k} \\
-\bar{X}_{1 k} \\
\ldots \\
(-1)^{t} \bar{X}_{t k}
\end{array}\right)=H_{k}^{T} H_{k} M_{t k}^{+}\left(\begin{array}{c}
+\bar{X}_{0 k} \\
-\bar{X}_{1 k} \\
\ldots \\
(-1)^{t} \bar{X}_{t k}
\end{array}\right)= \\
& =H_{k}^{T} H_{k}\left(X_{0 k}^{+}\left|X_{1 k}^{+}\right| \cdots \mid X_{t k}^{+}\right)\left(\begin{array}{c}
+\bar{X}_{0 k} \\
-\bar{X}_{1 k} \\
\ldots \\
(-1)^{t} \bar{X}_{t k}
\end{array}\right)=H_{k}^{T} \sum_{i=0}^{t}(-1)^{i} H_{k} X_{i k}^{+} \bar{X}_{i k}= \\
& H_{k}^{T} \sum_{i=0}^{t}(-1)^{i} W_{i k}^{T} H_{i} \bar{X}_{i k}=H_{k}^{T} \sum_{i=0}^{t}(-1)^{i} W_{i k}^{T} \bar{W}_{i k} H_{k}=H_{k}^{T}\left(\sum_{i=0}^{t}(-1)^{i} W_{i k}^{T} \bar{W}_{i k}\right) H_{k}= \\
& =H_{k}^{T} H_{k}=N_{k} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence, since $N_{k}$ is a non-singular matrix,

$$
M_{t k}^{+}\left(\begin{array}{c}
+\bar{X}_{0 k} \\
-\bar{X}_{1 k} \\
\ldots \\
(-1)^{t} \bar{X}_{t k}
\end{array}\right)=I_{\tau_{k}},
$$

with $I_{\tau_{k}}$ identity matrix of order $\tau_{k}$. So

$$
M_{t k}^{+}\left(\begin{array}{c}
+\bar{X}_{0 k} \\
-\bar{X}_{1 k} \\
\ldots \\
(-1)^{t} \bar{X}_{t k}
\end{array}\right) M_{t k}^{+}=M_{t k}^{+}
$$

and, by Proposition 2.4.16, $M_{t k}^{+}$has index 1 . This means that the $\mathbb{Z}$-module spanned by the columns of $M_{t k}^{+}$is a pure submodule of $\mathbb{Z}^{\tau_{k}}$ of rank $\tau_{k}$. By Lemma 2.4.14 we have the claim.

Remark 5.4.8. By equation $H_{k} X_{t k}^{+}=W_{t k}^{T} H_{t}$, we deduce that the non-zero invariant factors of $X_{t k}^{+}$are the same of $W_{t k}^{T} H_{t}$, which is the matrix associated to the restriction

$$
\epsilon_{t}^{k}:\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}\right)^{G} \rightarrow \mathbb{Z} L_{k},
$$

with respect to the canonical bases $\mathcal{B}_{\Omega^{t}}$ and $L_{k}^{n}$, respectively.

Using the relations given in Lemma 5.4.2 it is possible to prove Theorem

Theorem 5.4.9. Let $0 \leq t<k \leq n$ and $t+k=n$. Then

$$
M_{t k}^{-}=\bigcup_{i=0}^{t} X_{i k}^{-}=\left(\begin{array}{c}
X_{0 k}^{-} \\
X_{1 k}^{-} \\
\ldots \\
X_{t k}^{-}
\end{array}\right)
$$

has rank $\tau_{t}$ and index 1.

Theorems 5.4.7 and 5.4.9 are exactly the first step of Wilson's proof. This suggested us conjecture 5.3.5. We tried to continue following the arguments of Wilson. We realized (see Proposition 3.1.3) that in his proof it is necessary that the matrix $M_{t k}$ has index 1 also for $t<k<n-t$. This is not true in our cases for matrices $M_{t k}^{+}$and $M_{t k}^{-}$.

## APPENDIX A

$$
\text { Smith group of } \epsilon_{t}^{k}:\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{t}\right)^{G} \rightarrow\left(\mathbb{Z} L_{k}\right)^{G}
$$

In this section we insert the program used in the Magma Computational Algebra System to verify that for any permutation group $G$ on $\Omega=\{1, \cdots, n\}$, where $n \leq 11,0 \leq t \leq k$ and $t+k=n$, the orbit matrix $X_{t k}^{+}$is equivalent to a diagonal form with entries $d_{i}=\binom{k-i}{t-i}$ and multiplicity $m_{i}=\tau_{i}-\tau_{i-1}$, for $i=0, \cdots, t$.
checkG:= function ( $\mathrm{G}, \mathrm{k}, \mathrm{t}$ )
 deg:= Degree (G);
Lk: =Subsets ( $\{1 \ldots \operatorname{deg}\}, \mathrm{k})$;
Lt:=Subsets (\{1.. deg \}, t);
Lk: = GSet (G, Lk) ;
Lt: = GSet (G, Lt ) ;
Ok: = Orbits (G, Lk);
Ot:=Orbits (G, Lt);

```
Op:=0;
row:=# Ot ;
col:=#Ok;
min:=Minimum(col, row);
Y:= [];
r:=1;
for l in [0..t] do
    Ll:=Subsets({1...deg},1);
    Ll:= GSet(G,Ll);
    O1:= Orbits(G, L1);
    molt:=#Ol-Op;
    if molt ne 0 then
        for i in [r..r+molt-1] do
            for j in [1..col] do
                if i ne j then
                d:=0;
                else
                d:= Binomial(k-1,t-1);
            end if;
            Y:=Append(Y,d);
            end for;
        end for;
        r:=r+molt ;
    end if;
    Op:=#Ol;
end for;
W:= Matrix(Integers(), row, col,Y);
```

```
return(<ElementaryDivisors (W) > );
```

end function;

```
checkGG:= function(G,k,t)
local deg,Lk,Lt,Ok,Ot,i,j,Tj, Ki,y,x,L,N;
deg:= Degree(G);
Lk:=Subsets({1..deg },k);
Lt:=Subsets({1..deg }, t);
Lk:=GSet(G,Lk);
Lt:=GSet(G,Lt);
Ok:= Orbits(G,Lk);
Ot:= Orbits(G,Lt);
L:= [];
for i in [1..#Ok] do
    Ki:=Ok[i];
    y:=Representative(Ki);
    for j in [1..#Ot] do
            Tj:= Ot[j];
            L:=Append(L,#{x:x in Tj|x subset y});
        end for;
end for;
N:= Matrix(Integers(),#Ok,#Ot,L);
return(<ElementaryDivisors(N) > );
end function;
S:=Sym(8);
Sub:= Subgroups(S);
```

```
Sub:=[x Alt+96 subgroup:x in Sub];
for G in Sub do
nr:= Degree (G);
for k in [1..nr] do
        if k ne nr-k then
        for t in [1..Minimum(k,nr-k)] do
                                    c:= checkG(G,k,t);
                                    cc:=checkGG(G,k,t);
                                    if not c[1] eq cc[1] then
                                    print <G,c[1],cc[1],t,k,nr>;
                                    end if;
            end for;
            end if;
    end for;
end for;
print <"Terminato">;
```


## APPENDIX B

## The case $t+k=n$

Here we write the program used to determine the vector $v^{+2}$ in the case $\Omega=\{1,2,3,4,5,6\}$, $t=2$ and $k=4$. For avoid confusion, we denote by $\alpha_{i}$ the $i^{t h}$ element of $\Omega$, with $i=1, \cdots, 6$.

Let

$$
\begin{gathered}
\mathcal{C}_{2}=\left\{\alpha_{1} \alpha_{2}, \alpha_{2} \alpha_{3}, \alpha_{1} \alpha_{3}, \alpha_{1} \alpha_{4}, \alpha_{2} \alpha_{4}, \alpha_{2} \alpha_{5}, \alpha_{3} \alpha_{4}, \alpha_{1} \alpha_{5},\right. \\
\left.\alpha_{3} \alpha_{5}, \alpha_{1} \alpha_{6}, \alpha_{2} \alpha_{6}, \alpha_{3} \alpha_{6}, \alpha_{5} \alpha_{6}, \alpha_{4} \alpha_{6}, \alpha_{4} \alpha_{5}\right\}
\end{gathered}
$$

be a canonical basis and

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathcal{P}_{2}= & \left\{\sum_{x \in L_{2}^{6}} x,\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{2}\right)\left(\alpha_{3}-\alpha_{4}\right),\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{2}\right)\left(\alpha_{3}-\alpha_{5}\right),\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{2}\right)\left(\alpha_{3}-\alpha_{6}\right),\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{3}\right)\left(\alpha_{2}-\alpha_{4}\right),\right. \\
& \left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{3}\right)\left(\alpha_{2}-\alpha_{5}\right),\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{3}\right)\left(\alpha_{2}-\alpha_{6}\right),\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{4}\right)\left(\alpha_{2}-\alpha_{5}\right),\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{4}\right)\left(\alpha_{2}-\alpha_{6}\right), \\
& \left.\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{5}\right)\left(\alpha_{2}-\alpha_{6}\right), \epsilon_{1}^{2}\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{2}\right), \epsilon_{1}^{2}\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{3}\right), \epsilon_{1}^{2}\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{4}\right), \epsilon_{1}^{2}\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{5}\right), \epsilon_{1}^{2}\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{6}\right)\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

be a standard basis of $\mathbb{Q} L_{2}^{6}$.

Similarly, let
$C_{4}=\left\{\alpha_{3} \alpha_{4} \alpha_{5} \alpha_{6}, \alpha_{1} \alpha_{4} \alpha_{5} \alpha_{6}, \alpha_{2} \alpha_{4} \alpha_{5} \alpha_{6}, \alpha_{2} \alpha_{3} \alpha_{5} \alpha_{6}, \alpha_{1} \alpha_{3} \alpha_{5} \alpha_{6}, \alpha_{1} \alpha_{3} \alpha_{4} \alpha_{6}, \alpha_{1} \alpha_{2} \alpha_{5} \alpha_{6}\right.$, $\left.\alpha_{2} \alpha_{3} \alpha_{4} \alpha_{6}, \alpha_{1} \alpha_{2} \alpha_{4} \alpha_{6}, \alpha_{2} \alpha_{3} \alpha_{4} \alpha_{5}, \alpha_{1} \alpha_{3} \alpha_{4} \alpha_{5}, \alpha_{1} \alpha_{2} \alpha_{4} \alpha_{5}, \alpha_{1} \alpha_{2} \alpha_{3} \alpha_{4}, \alpha_{1} \alpha_{2} \alpha_{3} \alpha_{5}, \alpha_{1} \alpha_{2} \alpha_{3} \alpha_{6}\right\}$
be a canonical basis and

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathcal{P}_{4}= & \left\{\sum_{y \in L_{4}^{6}} y, \epsilon_{2}^{4}\left(\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{2}\right)\left(\alpha_{3}-\alpha_{4}\right)\right), \epsilon_{2}^{4}\left(\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{2}\right)\left(\alpha_{3}-\alpha_{5}\right)\right), \epsilon_{2}^{4}\left(\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{2}\right)\left(\alpha_{3}-\alpha_{6}\right)\right),\right. \\
& \epsilon_{2}^{4}\left(\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{3}\right)\left(\alpha_{2}-\alpha_{4}\right)\right), \epsilon_{2}^{4}\left(\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{3}\right)\left(\alpha_{2}-\alpha_{5}\right)\right), \epsilon_{2}^{4}\left(\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{3}\right)\left(\alpha_{2}-\alpha_{6}\right)\right), \\
& \epsilon_{2}^{4}\left(\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{4}\right)\left(\alpha_{2}-\alpha_{5}\right)\right), \epsilon_{2}^{4}\left(\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{4}\right)\left(\alpha_{2}-\alpha_{6}\right)\right), \epsilon_{2}^{4}\left(\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{5}\right)\left(\alpha_{2}-\alpha_{6}\right)\right), \\
& \left.\epsilon_{1}^{4}\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{2}\right), \epsilon_{1}^{4}\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{3}\right), \epsilon_{1}^{4}\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{4}\right), \epsilon_{1}^{4}\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{5}\right), \epsilon_{1}^{4}\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{6}\right)\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

be a standard basis of $\mathbb{Q} L_{4}^{6}$.
We call $x$ and $y$ the matrices of change of basis from $\mathcal{P}_{2}$ to $C_{2}$ and from $\mathcal{P}_{4}$ to $C_{4}$, respectively.
\begin } \{ 1 stlisting \}
$\mathrm{Q}:=$ RealField ();
Q<o>:=CyclotomicField (3);
$\mathrm{R}<\mathrm{a}>\mathrm{:}=$ PolynomialRing ( $\mathrm{Q}, 1$ );
F<a>:=FieldOfFractions(R);
$\mathrm{G}:=$ MatrixAlgebra (F, 15);

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mathrm{x}:=\mathrm{G}! \\
& 1,0,0,0,1,1,1,1,1,1,0,1,1,1,1, \\
& 1,-1,-1,-1,-1,-1,-1,0,0,0,-1,-1,0,0,0, \\
& 1,1,1,1,0,0,0,0,0,0,1,0,1,1,1 \\
& 1,-1,0,0,-1,0,0,0,0,0,1,1,0,1,1 \\
& 1,1,0,0,0,0,0,-1,-1,0,-1,0,-1,0,0 \\
& 1,0,1,0,0,0,0,0,0,-1,-1,0,0,-1,0 \\
& 1,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,0,0,0,-1,-1,0,0 \\
& 1,0,-1,0,0,-1,0,-1,0,0,1,1,1,0,1 \\
& 1,0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,0,0,-1,0,-1,0 \\
& 1,0,0,-1,0,0,-1,0,-1,-1,1,1,1,1,0 \\
& 1,0,0,1,0,0,0,0,0,0,-1,0,0,0,-1, \\
& 1,0,0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,0,-1,0,0,-1, \\
& 1,0,0,0,0,0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,-1,-1, \\
& 1,0,0,0,0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,-1,0,-1, \\
& 1,0,0,0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,0,-1,-1,0] \\
& \text { y : =G }! \\
& 1,0,0,0,1,1,1,1,1,1,0,-1,-1,-1,-1, \\
& 1,-1,-1,-1,-1,-1,-1,0,0,0,1,1,0,0,0, \\
& 1,1,1,1,0,0,0,0,0,0,-1,0,-1,-1,-1 \\
& 1,-1,0,0,-1,0,0,0,0,0,-1,-1,0,-1,-1, \\
& 1,1,0,0,0,0,0,-1,-1,0,1,0,1,0,0
\end{aligned},
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& 1,0,1,0,0,0,0,0,0,-1,1,0,0,1,0 \\
& 1,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,0,0,0,1,1,0,0 \\
& 1,0,-1,0,0,-1,0,-1,0,0,-1,-1,-1,0,-1 \\
& 1,0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,0,0,1,0,1,0 \\
& 1,0,0,-1,0,0,-1,0,-1,-1,-1,-1,-1,-1,0, \\
& 1,0,0,1,0,0,0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,1 \\
& 1,0,0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,0,1,0,0,1 \\
& 1,0,0,0,0,0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,1,1 \\
& 1,0,0,0,0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,1,0,1 \\
& 1,0,0,0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,0,1,1,0]
\end{aligned}
$$

Determinant(x);
print" ";
$\mathrm{V}:=\mathrm{VectorSpace}(\mathrm{F}, 15)$;
$\mathrm{v}:=\mathrm{V}![-1,0,0,-1,1,2,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,1,0] ;$
$\mathrm{z}:=\mathrm{x}^{\wedge}-1$;
$\mathrm{w}:=\mathrm{v} * \operatorname{Transpose}(\mathrm{z})$;
print v ;
print w;
$\mathrm{w} *$ Transpose (y);

## Bibliography

[1] William Adkins and Steven Weintraub. Algebra: an approach via module theory, volume 136. Springer Science \& Business Media, 2012.
[2] Thomas Bier. Remarks on recent formulas of Wilson and Frankl. European journal of combinatorics, 14(1):1-8, 1993.
[3] Cristina Caldeira and João Filipe Queiró. Invariant factors of products over elementary divisor domains. Linear Algebra and its Applications, 485:345-358, 2015.
[4] Francesca Dalla Volta and Johannes Siemons. The boolean lattice and invariant factors of a matrix. Private communication, 2013.
[5] Peter Dembowski. Finite Geometries: Reprint of the 1968 edition. Springer Science \& Business Media, 2012.
[6] Peter Frankl. Intersection theorems and mod p rank of inclusion matrices. Journal of Combinatorial Theory, Series A, 54(1):85-94, 1990.
[7] Katalin Friedl and Lajos Rónyai. Order shattering and Wilson’s Theorem. Discrete Mathematics, 270(1):127-136, 2003.
[8] Ebrahim Ghorbani, Gholamreza B Khosrovshahi, Ch Maysoori, and M Mohammad-Noori. Inclusion matrices and chains. Journal of Combinatorial Theory, Series A, 115(5):878-887, 2008.
[9] Brian Hartley and Trevor O. Hawkes. Rings, Modules and Linear Algebra. Chapman \& Hall, 1970.
[10] Gordon Douglas James. The representation theory of the symmetric groups, volume 682. Springer, 2006.
[11] Rafael Plaza and Qing Xiang. Resilience of ranks of higher inclusion matrices. arXiv preprint arXiv:1612.08124, 2016.
[12] Joseph Rotman. An introduction to homological algebra. Springer Science \& Business Media, 2008.
[13] Johannes Siemons. On a class of partially ordered sets and their linear invariants. Geometriae Dedicata, 41(2):219-228, 1992.
[14] Johannes Siemons. Decompositions of modules associated to finite partially ordered sets. European Journal of Combinatorics, 15(1):53-56, 1994.
[15] Richard M Wilson. A diagonal form for the incidence matrices of $t$-subsets vs k-subsets. European Journal of Combinatorics, 11(6):609-615, 1990.

